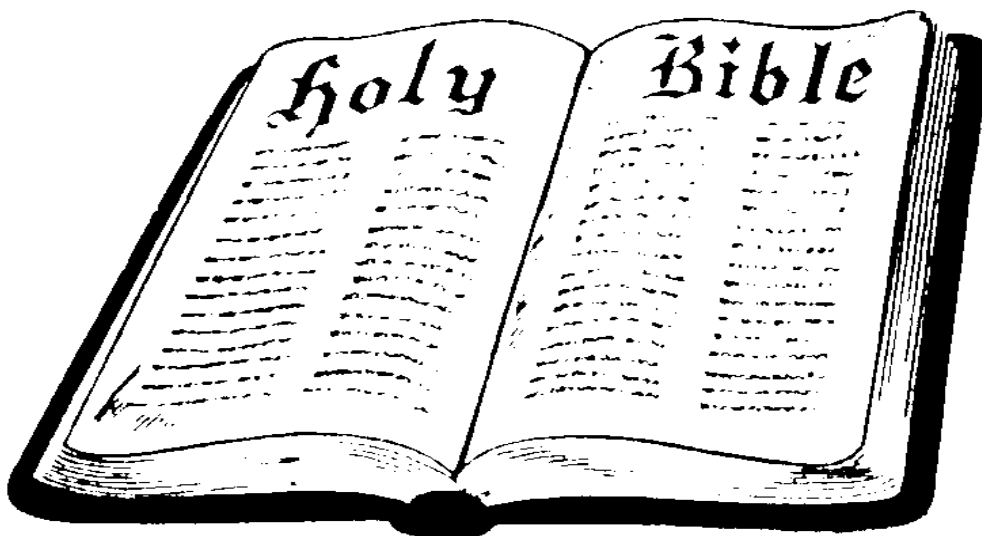


Where is America in Bible Prophecy?

By Dennis M. Edwards



?



Chapter Titles 1 - 52

Section One: Introduction and Personnel History

1. Introduction: You Can Know the Future by Understanding Bible Prophecy – page 6
2. The Bible: a Book of Prophecy – page 9
3. My Testimony – The Early Years – page 11
4. The Tough College Years – page 13
5. Miracle and Answered Prayer – page 20
6. Ellenville Christian Training Center – page 23
7. Sought by the FBI: God's Plan and Way of Escape! – page 26
8. The Test and the Reward – page 29
9. Filthy City Babylon: Witnessing in Greenwich Village – page 33

Section Two: Prophecy Fulfilled

10. The God of Daniel – Revealer of Secrets – page 36
11. Daniel's Mentor Joseph – The Imhotep Connection – page 39
12. The Daniel – Isaac Newton Connection – page 59
13. Jesus, the Book of Daniel and the Temple Institute – page 62
14. The Genesis Messianic Prophecy – page 66

15. Bible Prophecy – Mathematically Impossible – page 71

16. The Noah Prophecy – page 74

17. The Wild Man Prophecy – page 77

18. Isaac's Prophecy – page 82

19. Prophecies of Consequences – page 85

Section Three: The Evidence and Arguments

20. Are You a Prophecy Nut? – page 89

21. Is America in Bible Prophecy? – page 91

22. Is the Babylon of Revelation America? – page 92

23. Revelation 17 and Commentary – page 94

24. Who is the Great Harlot of Revelation? – page 101

25. The Boogie Banker Man Will Get You if You Don't Watch
Out – page 109

26. The World, Brother, the World! – Money, Money, Money
Makes the World Go 'Round! – page 114

27. The American Dream of Easy Living – page 122

28. Revelation Chapter 18 – page 125

29. Music is the Message – The Sirens of Babylon – page 128

30. Football, Fatima, and Fado – The FIFA-Olympics Connection
– page 142

- 31. Israel Has Forsaken Its Maker and Builds Temples – page 150
- 32. Arms, Arms, and More Arms! – It's Blood Money, Baby! – page 156
- 33. Israel of Old and America: a Parallel History – page 166
- 34. Consequences, Consequences, and More Consequences – page 169
- 35. Blessing or Curse – Which Will You Have? – page 174

Section Four: More Evidence and Argument

- 36. The Divided Kingdom – page 178
- 37. We Are Sister, We Are Harlots, and We Are Not Ashamed! – page 181
- 38. Reiki and the New Age Movement – page 190
- 39. Letter to a Friend Involved with Reiki – page 199
- 40. Is Revival Possible? – page 209
- 41. In Defense of Heterosexuality – page 213
- 42. Will We Also Be Buried in Profound Obscurity? – page 245
- 43. Paul's Understanding and Vision for a New Nation – The New Jew Theology – page 255
- 44. Jesus and a New Spiritual Israel – More than Overcomers – page 265

- 45. What About the Ten Commandment and Jewish Festivals and Kosher Eating Laws? – page 274
- 46. To Believe or Not to Believe, That is the Question – The Evolution Connection – page 284
- 47. The Scofield Connection: The Pre-Tribulation Fallacy and Corrie Tem Boom's Perspective – page 305
- 48. Moses' Exhortation to Israel, America and the World! – page 314
- 49. The Illuminati and the Protocols of Zion – How Deep is that Rabbit Hole? – page 316

Section Five: The Verdict

- 50. The End is Coming! – page 323
- 51. How Short is Shortened? – The Secret! – Page 337
- 52. Postscript – Spiritual Warfare in the Last days – page 344

All Bible verses are from the King James Bible, although I have changed some of the old English. Any similarity to any modern version is only by coincidence. Bible verses other than the King James have been foot-noted properly.

Section One: Introduction and Personnel History

Chapter 1

The Introduction:

You Can Know the Future by Understanding Bible Prophecy!

Many people are worried about the future. They look around them and see a world full of confusion, strife, economic failure and corruption, constant threat of war, terrorism, domestic violence, and sexual abuse. There are problems at home, problems at school, problems at work, problems with the neighbors, problems in the family, problems at church, financial problems, and health problems. But the biggest fear and worry is the constant fear that tomorrow will be worse, that there is no help in sight.

Man has seemed to have forgotten that there is a God who helps and who has told us that He is an ever-present help in time of trouble.[\[1\]](#) Because we do not know the future and how things will work out, we become anxious. We worry for ourselves, for our children and for their children. With the world in such a mess, as we see it today, is there any hope for the future? If we knew the future, would it help us to have faith that God is in control, even if it looks as if He has abandoned us to our own devices? Would it give us the confidence we need to struggle on and keep fighting in spite of all the obstacles that besiege us daily?

Would knowing the big picture of the future comfort us and help us to understand where the world is heading and why? I believe it would. Although some of what I am going to share with you may be shocking, in the end, I believe, it will comfort you and will help you to face the future bravely and unafraid knowing that God is in control. He is in control and He will not let

anything happen to us that is not for our good and for drawing us closer to Him. He is the great Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End.[\[2\]](#) In Him is fullness of life.[\[3\]](#) He has told us not to take any anxious thought for tomorrow.[\[4\]](#) But He has also told us to prepare and not be foolish.[\[5\]](#) The *Proverbs* tell us

A prudent man foresees the evil, and hides himself: but the simple pass on, and are punished.[\[6\]](#)

I propose that an understanding of *Bible* prophecy will help us to be ready for the future. It will help us have the right attitude towards others and towards life itself. It will prepare us to face the difficult days ahead with faith and confidence that God is ultimately in control. With God's love in our hearts and knowledge of His Word in our minds, we will be able to confront the difficulties that lay ahead, unafraid and confident that all things will work together for good because we love Him.[\[7\]](#)

It is my earnest prayer and hope that the information I am about to share with you will be an impetus for you to dig deep into God's Word. I pray this information will draw you closer to Him. I pray that it will help and encourage you so that you will be able to help and encourage others in the difficult days that lie ahead. One day we will meet together at Jesus' feet, where He will wipe every tear from our eyes and there shall be no more death, nor mourning, nor crying, nor pain any more.[\[8\]](#) Are you preparing for God's tomorrow? May the words the Lord has given me in this book, be a blessing to you and your family and open your eyes to the events that shall soon suddenly befall us.

Notes:

[1] [Psalm 46:1](#) God is our refuge and strength, a very present help in trouble.

[2] [Revelation 1:8](#) I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, says the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.

[3] [John 10:10](#) The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.

[4] [Matthew 6:31](#) Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed?

[5] [Matthew 7:24-27](#) Therefore whosoever hears these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that hears these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.

[6] [Proverbs 22:3](#)

[7] [Romans 8:28](#) And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.

[8] [Revelation 21:4](#) And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.

Chapter 2

The Bible: a book of Prophecy

I was listening to a lecture by Bill Salus entitled “*The Future of America in Bible Prophecy.*”[\[1\]](#) Bill is a famous American author, radio host and lecturer on Bible Prophecy. He starts off his lecture by quoting Isaiah,

Remember the former things of old: for I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me, declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure.[\[2\]](#)

Can we know the future? God’s Word says that we can, because God can reveal it. The prophet Amos said,

Surely the Lord God will do nothing but he reveals his secret to his servants the prophets.[\[3\]](#)

Here, Amos is making a conditional statement. God is going to reveal His secrets, not unto everyone, but unto His servants the prophets. The prophets were chosen of God, because of their love and obedience to Him. They were tested by God and had proved their faithfulness to Him. They desired to serve God, rather than man. They chose God over material things, over comfort and conformity. They preferred to live and die for the truth, than to live a life of compromise. Therefore, because of their dedication to God, to truth, to righteousness, God revealed His secrets unto them.

The prophet’s job was to give the Word of God to the people, to follow God’s instructions in spite of opposition by family, friends or community. Many of them bemoaned their fate as

God's mouth-pieces, because they were ill received. In *Chronicles* we read,

And the Lord God of their fathers sent to them by his messengers, rising up betimes, and sending; because he had compassion on his people, and on his dwelling place: But they mocked the messengers of God, and despised his words, and misused his prophets, until the wrath of the Lord arose against his people, until there was no remedy. [4]

In this book, I am going to reveal to you what God has revealed to me, one of his servants. I am going to talk about where I believe America fits in *Bible* prophecy. It will be an interesting study. I hope you will enjoy it. But first I must share a little about who I am and what qualifies me as one of God's servants. In these first chapters of the book I will share my story and I will let you judge from there. May God bless us as we study His Word together.

Notes:

[1] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GKOKqCk5vuo> (accessed 03/16)

[2] [Isaiah 48:9-10](#)

[3] [Amos 3:7](#)

[4] [2 Chronicles 36:15-16](#)

Chapter 3

My Testimony – The Early Years

Recently I have been reading through the documents I presented to my local draft board back in the year or so before receiving my notice for induction into military service in November 1971. I had applied to the board for a deferment as a conscientious objector. I was asked by them to explain my beliefs and from where, from whom and how I arrived at them. I will quote from the documents I presented to the board in this first part of *My Testimony*. Remember, I was twenty-one years old when writing this.

"I am the second son of Roman Catholic middle-class parents. My parents are good people. My father is a good-natured man who reads only the comics and the sports page. My mother passes the time away with television soap operas."

I need to interrupt here and confess that the above statement was how I was viewing my parents at that time. The truth actually was that my parents were a lot deeper and intellectually and politically aware than I thought. Now that I have made that point, let's go back to my letter to the military draft board.

"I have never talked seriously with my parents, but I remember in high school my mother's words in regard to my sister's dating.... 'Do what comes naturally,' which I interpreted as, 'Do what you think is right, or what your conscience dictates.' It is from my parents that the philosophy of love has been so deeply ingrained in me, though I suspect they are not aware of it."

My article to the military continued:

"I attended public school and with childhood resistance the Tuesday afternoon Catechism classes. As a young Catholic, I learned to fear the 'Almighty Lord' from nuns who seemed out of

the tradition of Jonathan Edwards. In my childhood years, I would every night before sleep say prayers for all the people I liked and especially for those I disliked. My fear of God made me overly conscious of my thoughts and actions. I constantly watched and scrutinized my behavior to be aware of sins."

"In the sixth grade, I was appointed captain of the safety patrol, though I hated the leadership position because of my shyness and my inability to tell others what they should do. With the advent of Junior High School came puberty and peer group relations. At 15, I had a complete falling out with my father and our relationship remained distant until just recently. In High School, I was very religious and obsessively conscious of the churches commandments. I tried to imitate the life of Christ. I was an average student, with friends that were 'jocks,' and friends that were 'nerds.' The most intriguing reading I did in High School was Thoreau's [Walden Pond](#). I also enjoyed Ralph Waldo Emerson. One quote of his still remains with me,

Every Stoic was a Stoic, but where in Christendom is the Christian?" [\[1\]](#)

"In my senior year I gained a deep relationship with a girl, my first intimate girlfriend. I seldom read a book or the daily newspaper. I graduated High School as president of my senior class, with the American Legion School Award for courage, honor, leadership, patriotism, scholarship and service. I had a vague hope of becoming a social worker or 'something like that.' I toyed with the idea of joining the military 'to do my duty.' But I was accepted to a college in Ohio and decided to go there instead."

Notes:

[1] Emerson, Ralph Waldo, *Self Reliance*, [essay](#).
<http://www.quotery.com/quotes/for-every-stoic-was-a-stoic-but-in-christendom-where/> (accessed 03/2016)

Chapter 4

The Tough College Years

Before getting started with the following chapter, I need to write a disclaimer. The title here is *The Tough College Years*. But by no means were they as tough as my fellow American colleagues were experiencing, who were fighting and dying by the tune of 5,000 a year in Vietnam. My friend [Ronnie Santoro](#) [1] was one of them. He joined the US Marines after high school and didn't make it through a year in combat. Real war is not like a video game where you just "start over."

Neither were those supposedly tough college years as tough as those that the poor Vietnamese civilians faced during that same period, or many other poor, undernourished oppressed populations faced elsewhere around the world. But they were tough for me as I looked death in the eyes in the form of suicide. It was during those years that my world view became atheistic and existential. One of the logical conclusions from that belief system was, why live? But before we get further into that question, we'll start the chapter as I had originally written it. Here we go.

Moving to Marietta College in Marietta, Ohio in September of 1967 was the beginning of a new life. I was thrown into a society in which I was a "nobody." No one knew I was president of my senior class. No one knew I was on the Central Jersey Group III State Champion football team. No one knew my girlfriend was secretary of the student body and a cheerleader. No one knew my best friend was president of the student body. No one knew what or who I was. An identity crisis was in full gear.

It was some time in that first year, that my former girlfriend came and told me she had another boyfriend. I was destroyed. Here I had been trying to keep all the church rules against

premarital sex and the thing that I loved the most, my girlfriend, “God” took from me and gave to another. I fell into a deep depression. I was mad at “God.” I stopped believing in Him and threw away my “religious” faith and threw myself into atheism, evolution and political anarchy. I had been taking a geology course that first year that fed me evolution and “billions of years.” I swallowed it all in as a rational justification for our existence without the need of a “God.” I began attacking the faith of Christian girls I would date. I tried to convert others to my new-found beliefs proving through science that the **Bible** was wrong.

It was during my sophomore year that my close call with death came. My required geology course in my freshman year had given me justification for my rejection of God. I was, as Richard Dawkins explained, an intellectually satisfied atheist. Darwinian evolution and millions of years had given me an alternative to the Biblical creation story.

In my psychology course we were studying, amongst others, Freud with his psychoanalysis, and Skinner with his psychological behaviorism, which was sort of the equivalent to psychological dialectic materialism. In **Comparative Religion** the head of the Religion department showed he was more emotionally excited about the “truths” of Buddhism than in the words of Jesus Christ. In my course on **Modern European Novels**, we were reading Kafka, Sartre and Camus with their atheistic existential meaningless-life world view.

With all the negative input I was having, it was no wonder, one bleak winter afternoon that I decided to drive my car off the bridge between Marietta, Ohio and Parkersburg, West Virginia and into the Ohio River. Like George Bailey in the film **It's a Wonderful Life**,^[2] I had gotten to end of myself and just wanted to end it all. But as the car began its course across the ice-covered bridge, at the moment when I was to jerk the wheel to the right and break through the protective fence into the water, I saw, in my mind's eye, the face of my dear Aunt Ida.

It had been just a few months earlier when Ida had taken me in her arms and asked me, “What’s the matter, Dennis?” I couldn’t answer, as I couldn’t open up to her and share what was going on inside me. I had been a quiet and shy person throughout my life. In fact, I was plagued with timidity. But Ida took it all in stride, and tenderly sang *I Love You a Bushel and a Peck and a Hug around the Neck*.^[3] As she rocked me in her arms, to that old familiar song she had used to sing to put me to sleep when I was just a wee little tot, I felt loved.

Because of the love my Aunt Ida had manifested to me, at that moment on the bridge, I knew I couldn’t kill myself. Even though my atheism and my existentialism seemed to cry “***Just Do It,***” I couldn’t. Somebody loved me. Ida loved me, and because Ida loved me, that meant love existed. I had felt it in Ida’s arms. If love existed, life wasn’t meaningless. Life was worth living. I just needed to keep on searching for the answers.

If life doesn’t seem worth living for you at the moment, maybe Nick Vujicic’s inspirational *YouTube* video will encourage you. Whatever you do, don’t give up!^[4]

I need to reiterate here that my parents were loving people. My mother often received into our home the individual woman neighbors who would confide in her their problems. My father was a happy, helpful person who was always making conversation with strangers in the supermarket or doing some shopping for one of the neighbors. But coming from a Polish family, we weren’t a very affectionate family. My parents didn’t give me hugs, or my grandparents. However, Ida did, as well as my Godmother Aunt Dolores.

In the 1980s, psychologist Dr. Virginia Satir shared with the 4,000 delegates of the American Orthopsychiatric Association the results of tests concerning the affects of hugging.^[5] Research had shown that as the amount of hugs a person received increased, so their psychological health and happiness also increased. The study concluded that 4 hugs a day were needed for survival, while

8 hugs were required for psychological, mental and emotional maintenance. For growth and happiness, 12 hugs a day were necessary. I think the “Free Hug” movement evolved from the above research. In Portugal we have a national association called “Abraços,” or “Hugs,”[\[6\]](#) based on the same idea with the goal of helping people infected by the AIDS virus.

Parents, please hug your children. I recently read a regret list where one of the regrets was “I wish I had hugged my wife, my children, my friends and my loved ones more often. I wish I had shown more physical affection for my loved ones.” I think we could all be more loving and do more to show our love through hugs and other forms of physical affection.

Three and a half years ago, as I was about to go to sleep, at around 12 midnight, I received a telephone call. It was one of those calls you don’t want anyone to receive. My twenty-seven year old son had gone missing. He hadn’t showed up for work. His friends found his clothing on the beach not far from their rented bungalow. He was a good worker, conscientious, a good son and I was proud of him. Yet, I couldn’t remember when was the last time I had told him, “Martin, I love you,” or “Martin, I’m proud of you.” I couldn’t remember the last time I had hugged him and showed him in a tangible way that I loved him.

Of course, the Lord is always a very present help in time of trouble. I was surprised how He helped me get through the perhaps most difficult event of my life, my son’s death. I prayed. I read the Bible. I spent time praising. But His most present help came in the form of the hugs I received, the physical affection that I received, the love I received sometimes from total strangers.

After I arrived in the Bermudas, where my son had been working, I made my way to the place where he had been employed. While asking directions, I told the young heavy-set Black Bermudian cashier that I was the father of the young man who had recently drowned. Without hesitating she said, “Do you mind if I come around from the cashier counter and give you a

hug?” And so it happened various times in the days that followed. The physical affection I received in the form of hugs from people I did not even know, the love that I received, was the single most identifiable factor to me being able to overcome the utter sadness and lost I felt. Friends, please hug your loved ones. They need it and you need it. We all need it and will be better persons for it.

Now let’s get back to the story.

It was a few months after my aborted suicide attempt, while smoking hashish with a close friend, when I had my "God" experience. I want to make it clear here I am not advocating taking drugs to find God, but God used this experience on my path to Him. I recently asked a friend of mine if he had a “God” experience while doing drugs. He said that while doing LSD he had had a “God” experience, but he had also had some very bad trips, demonic trips. It was the bad trips that assured him the Devil was real and which in turn made him search more desperately for God.

Here’s what happened to me. In a vision, I saw a small ball of light in the upper corner of the room. I was talking to my close friend Chris Smith at the moment. He was using some kind of encounter psychology to help me to open up. Finally, I reached out and touched his arm and said, “Yes, Chris, I need help!” At that very moment, with my confession of desperate need, the ball of light descended from the corner of the room and embraced me. Instantly, I was enveloped in an energy-field of unexplainable love. It was like a spiritual orgasm, a spiritual epiphany. My whole being had been transformed in an instance. It was kind of like what was visualized in the movie *Cocoon*[7] when the main male actor has “alien sex” with the beautiful female alien.

My first thought was "Is this what Jesus is all about?" From that moment on I knew love was the power and the force of the universe. On that day, I went home and apologized to my parents for the way I had acted as a rebellious teen, even having fought with my father twice during my teen years. All I wanted to do was

to love others. But now I had to consolidate my experience and find out where this power of love came from.

I started searching through different religious philosophies for truth. Buddhism was one of the first to catch my interest. I studied the eight-fold path of Siddhartha. I read Herman Hesse's books which contained Buddhist philosophy. I became an organic vegetarian. I also dabbled in Judaism as I had a Jewish girlfriend for a time. I read heavily on transcendental meditation and used as my spiritual guides, the books *Be Here Now* by Ram Dass, *Siddhartha* by Herman Hesse, *The Little Prince* by Antoine de Saint-Exupéry, *The Prophet* by Kahlil Gibran, and Erich Fromm's *The Art of Loving*, amongst others. I steered clear of Christian Evangelicals and Christianity and Catholicism which I assumed to be false because of the hypocritical actions of their followers and my previous experiences in childhood.

However, the question of war and my involvement in it, as I was due to be drafted after my four-year college deferment ended, led me to start reading heavily on the subject of conscientious objection to war and draft resistance. In my reading, I came across Leo Tolstoy's [*Letter to a Non-Commissioned Officer*](#),^[8] and *The Kingdom of God is Within You*.^[9] As Tolstoy mentions the teaching of Christ from the Sermon on the Mount in these writings, I started to read and study Jesus' own words found in chapters 5-7 of the Gospel of [*Matthew*](#) in the *New Testament*.

In June of 1971, I graduated from Marietta College with a Bachelors of Arts degree in History and was on the Dean's List with a straight B average. But by the month of October I had been denied conscientious objector status by the military, and after refusing to take the various pre-entrance examinations, I had been ordered to appear for induction into the US military or face the consequences. My mother, God bless her soul, telephoned me at the end of October telling me the FBI had been around to arrest me as I had not appeared for induction on the date specified.

I was working as a low-salaried teacher of special needs children in Marietta, Ohio at the time. However, when I put down the phone from speaking to my mom, I dropped to my knees and with tears falling from my eyes called out with all my heart to "God," if He indeed existed, to save me. I was not asking Him to save my soul, but to save me from the problem of having to go into the military, to save me from having to kill and/or be killed in Vietnam. But after having prayed, I rose from my knees and spit on the floor and said, "There's no God, so why am I praying?"

But I was soon to find out that God does answer prayer when we call upon Him with all our heart, even if our mind sometimes gets in the way.

Notes:

- [1] <http://www.virtualwall.org/ds/SantoroRP01a.htm#> (accessed 03/2016)
- [2] https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/It%27s_a_Wonderful_Life (accessed 03/2016)
- [3] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=aw2phldcmCQ> (accessed 03/2016)
- [4] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=AJvEoLPLIg8> (accessed 03/2016)
- [5] <http://eqi.org/ht.htm> (accessed 03/2016)
- [6] <http://www.abraco.org.pt/> (accessed 03/2016)
- [7] [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cocoon_\(film\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cocoon_(film)) (accessed 03/2016)
- [8] http://dwardmac.pitzer.edu/Anarchist_Archives/bright/tolstoy/officer.html
- [9] <http://www.gutenberg.org/ebooks/4602> (accessed 03/2016)

Chapter 5

The Miracle and Answered Prayer!

A few days passed and I still did not know what I would do about the draft. I knew my time was short and the FBI would soon find me in Marietta, as I was making no efforts to hide. In the end, I had decided to resist the draft and go to prison if need be. Resistance was a stance which every young American youth could take; White, Black, educated, uneducated, rich or poor. Cassius Clay, the famous boxer, who later changed his name to Mohammed Ali, had refused induction into the US military and had been jailed for it. I thought refusing induction was the most honest position to take, as it was open to every man and not just to the middle or upper-class White boys who could find a deferment or escape to Canada or Sweden.

Two weeks after my mother's phone call, I went for two days to Columbus, Ohio to attend a teachers' convention. It was on the return to Marietta that I picked up a hitch-hiking young couple on their way to Ellenville, New York. He was an American and she was from Mexican descent. They asked me what I believed. We soon got into a conversation with me sharing my philosophy of life developed from my four years at college and my search for the truth. Slowly, they began to talk to me about Jesus. At first, I remember thinking, "Oh, no, they're two Jehovah Witnesses." But, no, they were different.

After a time talking, we stopped at a restaurant where I bowed my head and asked Jesus, if He really was the Son of God, to come into my heart and life and show me. Later as we drove further, Chris talked with me about the importance of the Holy Spirit. So, while driving my brother's Volkswagen Beetle down the motor way, I prayed to receive the infilling of the Holy Spirit. Only a few more miles up the road was where I needed to drop

them off to start on my way back to Marietta, about one hundred miles south of Columbus.

Chris talked with me further. He encouraged me that it was no coincidence that I had met them. Now, he questioned, was God calling me to discipleship? I was already used to doing things on the spur of the moment, so I decided to take them to Ellenville and see this college community for myself. Could there really be a college to teach young Christian disciples to live for God? What impressed me the most about Chris and his partner was that they were just as much against the war as I was. It was the first time I had met “Christians” against the war. I had read about a famous Catholic Jesuit priest in Chicago who was, but I had never met personally a Christian against the war. Most of the people I knew against the war were non-believers, or at least, they weren’t church-goers.

I had spoken with Christian youth on the college campus. Those dedicated to Christ were usually always very pro-American, anti-communist and therefore willing to support the war effort in some way. I even had a very close friend who had been a conscientious objector and had served as an army medic in Vietnam. But as much as he had tried, he could not convince me that the conscientious objector was the most righteous or moral stand.

During my search for conscientious objector status, I had also gone and spoken to both Catholic Priests and Protestant Ministers. They had always told me it was my Christian duty to obey the government and don the army uniform and perform my duty for God and country. I had already come to the decision from reading Tolstoy and others, including Mark Twain's famous [*War Prayer*](#)^[1] and the *New Testament*, that this pro-war stance was a compromise and not in accordance with the words of Jesus. I had finally met some Christians who believed as I did about the war, and I now was going to see what made them tick.

If you are interested in praying the prayer I prayed please watch Billy Graham's *Defining Moments*.^[2]

Notes:

[1] <http://www.ntua.gr/lurk/making/warprayer.html> (accessed 03/2016)

[2] <https://myhopewithbillygraham.org/program/defining-moments/>
(accessed 03/2016)

Chapter 6

Ellenville Christian Training Center

We rolled into Ellenville, New York after an all-night journey through Pennsylvania and New Jersey. Ellenville was a beautiful little town in the Catskill Mountains, some one hundred miles north of New York City! It was already November and the trees were beginning to change their colors.

That first morning I remember meeting Don Slovenski from a Catholic-Polish family like my own. He had been President of the Catholic Young People's Association and had represented the Association in the Washington, DC's Christian Young People's Convention. He picked up a conversation with me and we were soon immersed in an interesting *Bible* study of [Daniel 2](#) and end-time prophecy.

He then showed me [Matthew 24](#) about the signs Jesus gave concerning His return to Earth and the end of the world. I had tried to read the *Bible* before, starting at Genesis, but had gotten bogged down soon afterwards in *Leviticus* or *Deuteronomy*. But reading with Don, the *Bible* made so much sense. In the *Bible*, I was finding confirmations of the experiences I was going through and the conclusions I had been making as a person. The *Bible* was confirming my own thought-out conclusions and showing me they were right. Jesus was indeed the truth I had been looking for. My search of many years into different religions and world views ended. I had found the answer: the way, the truth and the life[\[1\]](#), the Word of God, the Word made flesh, Jesus Christ.[\[2\]](#)

I was in no hurry to go back to Marietta, with the FBI on my trail, so I decided to stay at the Ellenville Christian Training Center and enter its three-month course called Biblical Evangelism & Ministry Training. The course was comprised of *Bible* studies, lectures, Scripture memorization and afterwards

personal witnessing in Greenwich Village in New York City. I was also required to be part of the work crew, as there was no tuition, but an obligatory work load. I was assigned the job of breakfast cook and also dishwashing overseer. That sounds simple enough. The only problem was there were around two hundred people living on the campus.

The center's campus was actually a group of summer cottages, and one main house which was used for meals and united meetings. The breakfast was not too complicated, as I had worked as an assistant breakfast cook during my years at Marietta College. However, the dishwashing overseer was a greater challenge, as I was still quite shy and found it difficult to correct others and enforce discipline.

I was one of the older people at the camp and one of the few with a college education. My work crew was mainly rebellious 18 and 19 year-olds coming from the hippy scene, who did not take kindly to schedules and overseers. As a result, many times I stayed up late until 2 or 3 o'clock in the morning finishing up the dishes. The problem was I had to be up at 5:30 am to start breakfast. After a few weeks of this grueling schedule, I was suffering from physical exhaustion from lack of sleep.

Also, I was still holding unto my old vegetarian eating habits. But here, very little vegetarian proteins were available to eat, as most of the food was donated by local businesses or fast-food joints, and consisted of sandwiches, donuts, pastas, and some local in-season fruits. I remember on various occasions fainting from exhaustion. I finally saw the necessity of eating what was set before me, as Paul so wisely admonished.[\[3\]](#)

Notes:

[1] [John 14:6](#) Jesus said unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.

[2] [John 1:14](#) And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

[3] [1Corinthians 10:27](#) If any of them that believe not bid you to a feast, and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.

Chapter 7

Sought by the FBI: God's Plan and Way of Escape!

After graduating from Marietta College, I began working as a teacher at Friendship School in Marietta, Ohio. I had a class of twelve slightly physically and or mentally handicapped children from ages seven to thirteen plus one autistic boy. I had requested that this job be counted as my alternative service, if I had been granted conscientious objector status. But my request was denied. However, even knowing of my problem with the military, the director of the school had hired me as I had worked as a volunteer for two years doing fifteen hours a week as teacher assistant. I had even cut down on some of my studies to make volunteering possible. But on Monday, November 9th, I had not showed up for work. Neither had I phoned in which was unusual for me, as I was generally conscientious. What had happened?

Back at Ellenville, I had no access to a land phone and was unable to go into town because of my classes and work responsibilities. There were no mobile phones at that time. I was actually learning so much in the lectures and **Bible** studies that was satisfying my soul that I was overjoyed spiritually. Finally, I got a letter off to my parents which they received eleven days after I had gone “missing.” In the meantime, when my parents learned I had not showed up for work nor had phoned, they filed a missing person’s report with the police in Ohio. Little did I know the heartache I was causing to my whole family: parents, grandparents, siblings, cousins, aunts and uncles, friends . . . everyone!

The college paper published an article saying I had gone missing. Another article came out in the local paper about the young graduate, now teacher, gone missing. My parents even travelled from New Jersey out to Ohio to search for me. They feared I had had a serious car accident and may have been injured and in need of help. They travelled the same route I had taken,

stopping at every roadside ditch in search for a sign of me or my brother's car which I had been driving. My sister and brother-in-law called every police department and hospital along the route from Marietta to Columbus, Ohio, desperately seeking for me.

While I was getting "turned on" to Jesus, they were sleep-deprived with worry, asking God for my safe return. It was a horrible time for them. I need to acknowledge here the pain my actions caused them. I am sorry I caused them so much pain. It was an intensely emotional time for me. I was in dire straits and was thinking more about myself than anyone else! It was a time of tough decisions. I had decided to stand up to the American military and say 'no' to war. The FBI was after me! Would I serve time in jail, or be forced to join the military? I felt like a drowning man going down for the third time. I needed to save myself first before I could be of any use or help to others. But God had answered my prayer, and as I began to study His Word the emotional turmoil I had been encountering began to subside. I was lost in His love and it was wonderful! But it had not been wonderful for my friends and family.

Maybe that is why we will need eternity in Heaven to work out all these heart-aches we have caused one another through our lack of love. They do take time to mend and heal. We will be doing a lot of apologizing and forgiving and being forgiven. God says,

I will wipe away all your tears,[\[1\]](#)

so obviously there will be tears in Heaven as we acknowledge our wrong-doing, and try to make things right! I am sorry, family, for how I hurt you. Please find a way to forgive me. Looking back on these circumstances and all that happened, I can see it was God's plan to save me from the FBI, who may have been totally confused by these events. I could not have invented a better plan had I tried. But God manufactured His own way of escape for me, to enable me to spend time in His Word learning of Him and His will for my life. As He says in His Word,

God is faithful who will not suffer you to be tempted above that you are able, but will with the temptation make a way to escape that you may be able to bear it![\[2\]](#)

Notes:

[1] [Revelation 21:4](#) And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.

[2] [1Corinthians 10:13](#)

Chapter 8

The Test and the Reward

When my family finally received word from me by post, my parents came to see me at the college. The conditions at the training center were very basic. The center was not an officially recognized institution, but rather more of a Christian community and run as a training center for disciples. Some of the Jesus People movement from California had started it. I remember sleeping on the floor at night in a thinly-walled cabin. But I was learning to be a disciple for Jesus. Whatever physical sacrifice I had to make was hardly important.

My parents wanted to be sure I knew what I was doing. They were quite reluctant to let me stay at the community. If I wanted to serve God, why could I not become a Priest or find some other way? But seeing I was twenty-two years of age at the time, and they could not convince me otherwise, they left, hoping it was a passing phase.

My father later told me something when he was near to the end of his life. He had found Jesus through some woman he had met at the day center he frequented. He said, "Dennis, you found Jesus when you were young and dedicated your whole life to Him, which I could never understand. I lived almost my whole life without that personal relationship with Jesus. I do not know how I did it, but now that I have found Jesus, I understand your decision and life choices."

A few days afterward my parent's visit, a close friend from childhood named Chris came for an afternoon. He was going to bring me home "one way or the other." That's what he told me when we went for a ride in his car. But seeing the conviction and happiness I had and that I was staying at the college community under my free will, he also left, though somewhat disappointed.

Finally, some of my college friends and my brother came from Ohio to convince me I was making a bad decision and bring me to my senses. But again, it was fruitless. My will was sure and I could not be moved. I must apologize here to my brother for the way he found his car. All his music tapes were missing. The tires of his car were flat and no compensation was given, though he did recover some money from my bank account back in Marietta. With close to 200 young people, many coming off drugs and out of hippy lifestyles, not everyone was as “Christian” as they should have been.

I remember thinking during my first days at the college community that maybe it was all a communist plot to subvert American young people against the war using the *Bible*. But the Word of God I was learning in the classes could not be refuted. The Word had become a light unto my path and a lamp upon my feet.[\[1\]](#) I was building my foundation of faith based on God’s Word, and it was refreshing. It was like taking a bath and getting cleansed from all the filth of my life! I was being born again. But, like in the movie *[The Matrix](#)*,[\[2\]](#) it was not easy. I had to let go of old, false mindsets, and accept new ones. As Jesus said,

If you continue in My Word, then are you My disciples indeed, and you shall know the truth & the truth shall set you free.[\[3\]](#)

Apostle Paul also said,

If any man be in Christ he is a new creature, old things are passed away, behold all things are become new.[\[4\]](#)

I was becoming that new man in Christ. In December, there was a heavy downfall of snow. I was responsible for bringing the food to the director’s office in the evenings. One evening I overheard the directors talking about testing some of the new students to see if they were really there for the right motives. The following morning a group of us were taken on a job to move a broken-down vehicle to a more accessible location on the campus.

Besides the snow, it started sleeting, and I remember I did not have adequate winter clothing, as I had never gone back to Marietta to pick up my things, seeing it was so far away.

It was freezing cold and I ended up fainting as we tried to push the vehicle. I, also, had not been eating properly. The group of students carried me back to one of the unused cabins. Someone tried to light a fire in the wood stove to warm us up. However, the chimney was blocked and all the smoke filled the room. Here we were freezing cold, wet, choking from the smoke. But I was happy. My heart was with God and I had found His peace and truth. Love was indeed the answer.

Peace I leave with you,

Jesus said,

My peace I give unto you: not as the world gives, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.[\[5\]](#)

I was not worried or afraid anymore. God was real and He was going to take care of me somehow. The time at the Ellenville was like being at a boot camp or in the war together. Instead of having my military boot camp at Fort Dix, I had my spiritual boot camp at the college in Ellenville. I learned that we are in a spiritual battle and we must use spiritual weapons to defeat the enemy. Like Apostle Paul has said,

For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty thorough God to the pulling down of strongholds; casting down imaginations and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ.[\[6\]](#) *For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.*[\[7\]](#)

Great bonds of friendship were formed, some of which, I have until this day. Upon graduating from the three-month course, I sent my certification of ministry training into my draft board. A few months later I was notified that my draft status had been changed and I was no longer 1-A, or immediately available for induction into military service. For some reason, not explained by the draft board, I had been reclassified. God had done the miracle and rewarded my decision to serve Him no matter what. From that moment on, I dedicated my life to the service of bringing souls to the Kingdom of God.

Jesus said,

Seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. [\[8\]](#)

God had answered His promise and delivered me from the hand of man. I in turn had promised Him I would love and serve Him to my dying breath.

Notes:

[1] [Psalm 119:105](#) Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path.

[2] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zE7PKRjrid4&list=PL842063FF9CD2577F> (03/2016)

[3] John 8:31-32

[4] [2Corinthians 5:17](#)

[5] [John 14:27](#)

[6] [2Corinthians 10:4-5](#)

[7] [Ephesians 6:12](#)

[8] [Matthew 6:33](#)

Chapter 9

Filthy City Babylon – Witnessing in Greenwich Village

Another part of the training program was the witnessing adventures into New York City, especially Greenwich Village, a gathering place for hippies and beatniks. After a few weeks of intense classes, inspiration and Scripture memorization, it was time to share my new-found faith with others. I was roaring to go in spite of my natural shyness. Friday afternoon rolled in the “Prophet Bus,” an old converted school bus with red sack cloth as curtains on the windows and red carpeted floor. “Maybe they are communists after all,” I thought again. Nevertheless, I piled into the bus with the other students and got ready for my next adventure: witnessing for Jesus.

We travelled down the one hundred miles to the George Washington Bridge. One of the teachers pulled out his guitar and started singing a song called “*Filthy City Babylon*,” with illusions to chapters seventeen and eighteen in the book of ***Revelation***. The bridge and the city were decked out with all manner of lights. After the song, another teacher read verses right from the book of ***Revelation***:

And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet color, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY; BABYLON THE GREAT MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her I wondered with great admiration. And the angel said unto me, wherefore did thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and the beast that carries her, and has the seven heads and ten

horns.[1] And the woman which thou saw is that great city, which reigns over the kings of the earth.[2]

Here we were entering that “great city,” New York City, which truly reigned economically over the kings of the earth through her banking system and commerce. The teacher kept on reading.

And the angel cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird; For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.

And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues; For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God has remembered her iniquities.[3]

For thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived.[4]

Surely this was a picture of the American Empire with its financial capital in New York City, which uses its great financial power to suck the natural resources and wealth from the nations of the earth. And yet all the nations wanted to sell their merchandise here in America where they could make good money. They would close their eyes to America's sins of war and oppression of the poor nations, as long as they were making money and filling their own pockets.

We entered into New York City and over to Greenwich Village. It was great to be able to share my new faith with others. But not many were really interested. Most people were into their own trip and could not be bothered. Nevertheless, there always

was someone searching and looking for they knew-not-what, and they were ready to hear my story and meet my Lord. Are you?

For more than forty years, I have been sharing my faith with others in such places as: Canada, England, Germany, France, Spain, Japan, Taiwan, Portugal, Mozambique, Bosnia, Algeria, and South Africa. I have found the heart of man is the same the world over. His search and desire for love, happiness, peace and freedom are not unique to one group or nation of people, but are common to all men everywhere.

But how can I so rapidly come to the above conclusion that America is the modern day fulfillment of Babylon the Whore of the book of *Revelation*? Let's get back into our study of the *Bible* as a book of prophecy to see how. Let us "*rightly divide the word of truth*"^[5] to see if these things are so. First we will go into a little *Bible* history to see if we can actually trust the *Bible* as an accurate book of prophecy. Here we go.

Notes:

[1] [Revelation 17:4-7](#)

[2] [Revelation 17:18](#)

[3] [Revelation 18:2-5](#)

[4] [Revelation 18:23](#)

[5] [2Timothy 2:15](#) Study to show thyself approved unto God, a work man that needs not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

Section Two: Prophecy Fulfilled

Chapter 10

The God of Daniel – Revealer of Secrets

In the book of *Daniel* in the *Old Testament* we find Daniel and his friends living in captivity in Babylon during the reign of Nebuchadnezzar. Since they were sons of noblemen they had been chosen to be trained in the sciences of the Babylonians. However, when they go to the Babylonian school for training, they are presented with foods which they are not used to eating, foods that were forbidden in the laws of Moses. They decide to keep to their convictions and refuse to eat the Babylonian foods, preferring the basically vegetarian diet of their culture. As a result, God blesses them. In the end, they pass their exams in the Babylonian sciences so well that the *Bible* says,

And in all manner of wisdom and understanding, that the king inquired of them, he found them ten times better than all the magicians and astrologers that were in all his kingdom.[\[1\]](#)

In the *Psalms* we read these promises:

Thou through thy commandments hast made me wiser than mine enemies: for they are ever with me. I have more understanding than all my teachers: for thy testimonies are my meditation. I understand more than the ancients, because I keep thy precepts.[\[2\]](#)

Those that meditate on God's Word and follow His precepts are accorded wisdom from on High.

In the process of time, Nebuchadnezzar, the King of Babylon, has a troublesome dream which he cannot remember. He calls for

all the wise men in Babylon to divine the dream for him and its interpretation. The wise men protest saying the king could not ask such a thing as it was impossible for them to know the king's dream, if he himself could not remember it. But the king insists and says, "Tell me the dream and the interpretation of it or you will all be slain."[\[3\]](#)

It is at this point that Daniel tells the captain of the guard to give him time and he will find out the dream and its meaning. Daniel and his friends get down in desperate prayer and pray that God in His mercies will reveal the dream unto them. Daniel in a vision in the night sees the King's dream and learns the interpretation of it. And Daniel thanks God:

Blessed be the name of God forever and ever: for wisdom and might are his: And he changes the times and the seasons: he removes kings, and sets up kings: he gives wisdom unto the wise, and knowledge to them that know understanding: He reveals the deep and secret things: he knows what is in the darkness, and the light dwells with him. I thank you, and praise you, O thou God of my fathers, who has given me wisdom and might, and has made known unto me now what we desired of you: for thou has now made known unto us the king's matter.[\[4\]](#)

Afterwards when Daniel is before the King, the King asks him if he is able to make known to him his dream and the interpretation thereof. Daniel responds:

The secret which the king has demanded cannot the wise men, the astrologers, the magicians, the soothsayers, show unto the king; But there is a God in heaven that reveals secrets, and makes known to the king Nebuchadnezzar what shall be in the latter days.[\[5\]](#) ***But as for me, this secret is not revealed to me for any wisdom that I have more than any living.***[\[6\]](#)

Daniel goes on to explain the dream and its interpretation. The king bows down before him and worships him and says,

Of a truth it is, that your God is a God of gods, and Lord of kings, and a revealer of secrets, seeing you could reveal this secret.[\[7\]](#)

Daniel is made ruler over the whole province of Babylon and chief governor over all the wise men of Babylon. His friends are also given positions of authority in the province of Babylon, but Daniel served as the king's counselor. It was Daniel's relationship with God; it was his desperation and ability to hear from God, which enabled him to be able to interpret the king's dream, a prophecy about the future of the world. He might have even taken courage from the story of Joseph which he knew from the book of **Genesis** which he had studied and memorized as a child and youth. Joseph's story may have encouraged Daniel that God could do the same with him.

I put this section about Daniel in to reiterate the point that God is a revealer of the future. In fact, the book of **Daniel** is one of the most important prophecy books in the **Bible**. A little book with only twelve chapters, it has nearly eight whole chapters given to prophecy and two other chapters given to prayer. One prophecy that Daniel received predicted the year of the Messiah's death and much of the other prophecy is specifically for the "latter days."

Notes:

[1] [Daniel 1:20](#)

[2] [Psalm 119:98-100](#)

[3] [Daniel 2:12-13](#) For this cause the king was angry and very furious, and commanded to destroy all the wise men of Babylon. And the decree went forth that the wise men should be slain; and they sought Daniel and his fellows to be slain.

[4] [Daniel 2:20-23](#)

[5] [Daniel 2:27-28](#)

[6] [Daniel 2:30](#)

[7] [Daniel 2:47](#)

Chapter 11

Daniel's Mentor Joseph – The Imhotep Connection

Could Imhotep, the Egyptian Scientist and Architect, have been the Biblical Joseph?

Interesting enough, the prophet Daniel of the time of Nebuchadnezzar King of Babylon was not the first Israelite to interpret dreams and end up as chief counsel to the head of an important country. Let us review the history of Joseph and his influence in Egypt. As you may well remember, Joseph, a child of Jacob, was sold into slavery out of his brother's jealousy of him and his special relationship with their father. Joseph was the first son of Jacob's beloved wife Rachel, for whom he had worked fourteen years as her dowry. *Genesis* tells us:

Now Israel loved Joseph more than all his children, because he was the son of his old age: and he made him a coat of many colors. And when his brethren saw that their father loved him more than all his brethren, they hated him, and could not speak peaceably unto him. And Joseph dreamed a dream, and he told it his brethren: and they hated him yet the more. And he said unto them, Hear, I pray you, this dream which I have dreamed: For, behold, we were binding sheaves in the field, and, lo, my sheaf arose, and also stood upright; and, behold, your sheaves stood round about, and made obeisance to my sheaf.

And his brethren said to him, Shall thou indeed reign over us? or shall thou indeed have dominion over us? And they hated him yet the more for his dreams, and for his words. And he dreamed yet another dream, and told it his brethren, and said, Behold, I have dreamed a dream more; and, behold, the sun and the moon and the eleven stars made obeisance to me. And he told it to his father, and to

his brethren: and his father rebuked him, and said unto him, What is this dream that thou hast dreamed? Shall I and thy mother and thy brethren indeed come to bow down ourselves to thee to the earth? And his brethren envied him; but his father observed the saying.[\[1\]](#)

In other words, Jacob wondered what all those dreams Joseph was having really meant. Could there be something to them? As a young adult, he himself had had a dream from God.

And he dreamed a dream, and behold a ladder set up on the earth, and the top of it reached to heaven: and behold the angels of God ascending and descending on it. And, behold, the Lord stood above it, and said, I am the Lord God of Abraham thy father, and the God of Isaac: the land whereon thou lies, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed; And thy seed shall be as the dust of the earth, and thou shall spread abroad to the west, and to the east, and to the north, and to the south: and in thee and in thy seed shall all families of the earth be blessed. And, behold, I am with thee, and will keep thee in all places whither thou goes, and will bring thee again into this land; for I will not leave thee, until I have done that which I have spoken to thee of.[\[2\]](#)

Interesting enough, Mary the mother of Jesus had a similar reaction as Jacob to the events surrounding Jesus' birth. When the shepherds come and proclaim they have seen angels announcing Jesus' birth, Mary also becomes pensive wondering what it all can mean. We can read from *Luke*:

And she brought forth her firstborn son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn.

And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. And, lo,

the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid.

And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.

And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us. And they came with haste, and found Mary, and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger. And when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child.

And all they that heard it wondered at those things which were told them by the shepherds. But Mary kept all these things, and pondered them in her heart.[\[3\]](#)

Parents have been wondering for thousands of years what the future will hold for their children. Even so, both Jacob and Mary had similar reactions to the obvious unusual events of their child's childhood.

Getting back to our history in Canaan, you may remember that out of hatred and jealousy, Joseph's brothers sell him to merchants traveling down to Egypt. It's a beautiful story which you can read in the book of *Genesis* in the *Old Testament*. Eventually, Joseph ends up in prison on a false accusation.

And Joseph's master took him, and put him into the prison, a place where the king's prisoners were bound: and he was there in the prison. But the Lord was with Joseph, and showed him mercy, and gave him favor in the sight of the keeper of the prison. And the keeper of the prison committed to Joseph's hand all the prisoners that were in the prison; and whatsoever they did there, he was the doer of it. The keeper of the prison looked not to anything that was under his (Joseph's) hand; because the Lord was with him (Joseph), and that which he (Joseph) did, the Lord made it to prosper.[\[4\]](#)

So Joseph even prospered in his situation in prison in so much that the prison warden put Joseph in charge of the prisoners. In the process of time, two men, the Pharaoh's chief butler and chief baker, offend him and are thrown into prison. An investigation is made. During the time they are in prison, both men dream a dream which Joseph accurately interprets. On their release, one man is found guilty and killed and the other is restored to his place of service, just as Joseph had predicted. Joseph had pleaded with the man who was to be released to remember him to Pharaoh.

But think on me when it shall be well with thee, and show kindness, I pray thee, unto me, and make mention of me unto Pharaoh, and bring me out of this house: For indeed I was stolen away out of the land of the Hebrews: and here also have I done nothing that they should put me into the dungeon.[\[5\]](#)

But the man refrains from mentioning him to the Pharaoh at that time.

Yet did not the chief butler remember Joseph, but forgot him.[\[6\]](#)

So Joseph remains in prison. But after two years, Pharaoh dreams a dream.

And Pharaoh awoke, and, behold, it was a dream. And it came to pass in the morning that his spirit was troubled; and he sent and called for all the magicians of Egypt, and all the wise men thereof: and Pharaoh told them his dream; but there was none that could interpret them unto Pharaoh.[\[7\]](#)

Finally, the chief butler reminds the Pharaoh of Joseph in prison and his ability to accurately interpret dreams. Pharaoh calls for him.

Then Pharaoh sent and called Joseph, and they brought him hastily out of the dungeon: and he shaved himself, and changed his raiment, and came in unto Pharaoh. And Pharaoh said unto Joseph, I have dreamed a dream, and there is none that can interpret it: and I have heard say of thee, that thou canst understand a dream to interpret it. And Joseph answered Pharaoh, saying, It is not in me: God shall give Pharaoh an answer of peace.[\[8\]](#)

Joseph interprets Pharaoh's dream, and in the end the Pharaoh appoints Joseph to the office of Prime Minister of all of Egypt.

And Pharaoh said unto Joseph, See, I have set thee over all the land of Egypt. And Pharaoh took off his ring from his hand, and put it upon Joseph's hand, and arrayed him in vestures of fine linen, and put a gold chain about his neck; And he made him to ride in the second chariot which he had; and they cried before him, Bow the knee: and he made him ruler over all the land of Egypt. And Pharaoh said unto Joseph, I am Pharaoh, and without thee shall no man lift up his hand or foot in all the land of Egypt.[\[9\]](#)

Various scholars have researched secular history for confirmation of the *Bible's* accuracy. If the Biblical account is true, surely we should be able to find a mention of Joseph in Egyptian history. Making careful and reasonable studies some

scholars have concluded that the famous Imhotep of Egypt may in fact have been none other than Joseph.[10]

We will continue from the *Bible*.

And Pharaoh called Joseph's name Zaphnathpaaneah; and he gave him to wife Asenath the daughter of Potipherah priest of On. And Joseph went out over all the land of Egypt. And Joseph was thirty years old when he stood before Pharaoh King of Egypt. And Joseph went out from the presence of Pharaoh, and went throughout all the land of Egypt.[\[11\]](#)

Isn't the *Bible* a fascinating book? Joseph even got to marry the daughter of the most important religious personality, the Priest of On. Now he was not only the Prime Minister, but probably would also have influence on the religious institution through his marriage to the High Priest's daughter. He may even have been next in-line to inherit the High Priest position himself. We don't know for sure that the position could be inherited, but Joseph would be a natural candidate, especially with his spiritual background and ability of interpreting dreams and hearing from God. From Egyptian history we know that Imhotep did become the High Priest of Heliopolis, the Greek name for On. Could Imhotep have been Joseph?[12]

Wikipedia notes that the following:

The Upper Egyptian Famine Stela, dating from the Ptolemaic period, bears an inscription containing a legend about a famine of seven years during the reign of Djoser. Imhotep is credited with having been instrumental in ending it.

However, *Wikipedia* makes the following comment:

At the time of first translating the stela, it was thought that the story of a seven-year-famine was connected to the

biblical story in Genesis 41, where also a famine of seven years occurs. But more recent investigations have showed that a seven-year famine was a myth common to nearly all cultures of the Near East.[\[13\]](#)

If the seven-year famine was in fact a historical event, we would expect to find similar records of it throughout the Near East, especially if it was as severe as the ***Bible*** denotes. Modern historians and scientists often reject off-hand any scientific or historical evidence which confirms what the ***Bible*** records. That's why we see the words "legend" and "myth" in the above ***Wikipedia*** comment.

Since the time of Scottish geologist James Hutton in 1788 and Charles Lyell in 1830, whose published works aimed at removing Moses from science, scientists have increasingly had a naturalistic interpretation of the scientific data. They start with the precept that all of science and history can only be explained by natural causes without the need to suppose the hand of a Divine Creator. As one evolutionist Professor of Genetics, Richard Lewontin has said,

We take the side of evolutionary science in spite of the patent absurdity of some of its constructs, in spite of the tolerance of the scientific community for unsubstantiated just so stories, because we have a prior commitment to materialism, and that materialism is absolute for we cannot allow a divine foot in the door.[\[14\]](#)

Earlier scientist, like Galileo, Kepler, and Newton, among many others, considered they were thinking God's thoughts after Him. They did not see the need for science to have an atheistic or purely naturalistic framework; in fact, they believed that true scientific study only certified the existence of a Divine Creator. At the time of the first translating of the Famine Stela, scientists were people of faith; therefore, they saw the obvious similarities of the stela to the Biblical narrative. As scientists became more atheistic and skeptical, their world view or belief system caused

them to reinterpret the data through the lens of atheism or naturalism. Because of the naturalistic lenses, scientists and historians needed to find another answer which would not confirm the Biblical record and give it credence. Bill Cooper has written an interesting study of old English, Irish, Welsh, Scottish and Danish documents. In his book, *After the Flood: The Early Post-Flood History of Europe*, he shows that early European man recorded his ancestry from Noah's son Japheth, the father of European peoples according to the *Bible*. Cooper notes,

I spent more than 25 years digging into the Table of Nations (found in Genesis 10 and showing the descendants of the sons of Noah after the flood) looking for fault, an error, a false statement, or a historical inaccuracy. I found none.[\[15\]](#)

Let's return to the comparison of Imhotep with Joseph. The statutes of Imhotep present him as a young man with a scroll on his knees. Joseph was also a young man, just thirty years old, when he became Chancellor of Egypt according to the *Old Testament*. From Egyptian history we know that Imhotep was responsible for the recording of government documents. He may have also initiated the improved changes in the hieroglyphic writings to include the phonetic system similar to the writings of the early Sumerians. Since Joseph's ancestors had come from Sumer, again this fits in nicely.

It is interesting to note that the word papyrus actually means "belonging to the house," or government. Under Joseph, the Pharaoh became the sole property owner in Egypt outside of the priesthood. So we would expect papyrus documents to be either government or religious documents. Since Egyptian history says that Imhotep was also High Priest, there would be no conflict. The question we need to ask is, could Joseph have become High Priest on the death of his father-in-law? To me, it seems there is too much coincidence and similarity to the Biblical record to deny its viability off-hand.

Joseph's Sumerian name could have been a mispronunciation of his name by the Egyptians resulting in the name Imhotep. Joseph told Pharaoh that God had given him a message of peace. Since Imhotep means, "comes in peace," maybe it was the name the Pharaoh gave him referring to his prophetic message of "peace." [16]

Joseph's quick rise to power is similar to Imhotep's own rapid rise. Again from Egyptian history, nothing is really known about Imhotep before his rise to power. If Imhotep was Joseph, it would be expected that his past would be a mystery. In the ***Bible***, we see Joseph acting alone as a single Chancellor. In later Middle and New Kingdoms, Egypt would not be managed by a single Chancellor, but the Pharaoh would need a whole team of men. [17] Here is an inscription found on a stone which once comprised the base for a statue of Djoser referring to Imhotep. Is it describing our very own Joseph?

The Chancellor of the King of Lower Egypt, the first after the King of Upper Egypt, administrator of the great palace, hereditary Lord, the High Priest of Heliopolis, Imhotep the Builder, the Sculptor, the maker of stone vases. [18]

Back in the Biblical account, we see that Pharaoh's dream was a warning about the famine which would come upon the land in seven years time. With knowledge of the future, Joseph begins to store corn for those times.

And in the seven plenteous years the earth brought forth by handfuls. And he gathered up all the food of the seven years, which were in the land of Egypt, and laid up the food in the cities: the food of the field, which was round about every city, laid he up in the same. And Joseph gathered corn as the sand of the sea, very much, until he left numbering; for it was without number. [19]

And the seven years of plenteousness, that was in the land of Egypt, were ended. And the seven years of dearth began

to come, according as Joseph had said: and the dearth was in all lands; but in all the land of Egypt there was bread. And when all the land of Egypt was famished, the people cried to Pharaoh for bread: and Pharaoh said unto all the Egyptians, Go unto Joseph; what he says to you, do. And the famine was over all the face of the earth: and Joseph opened all the storehouses, and sold unto the Egyptians; and the famine waxed sore in the land of Egypt. And all countries came into Egypt to Joseph for to buy corn; because that the famine was so sore in all lands.[\[20\]](#)

Joseph's brothers also must go down to Egypt to buy bread. And after testing them to see if they had repented of their crime against him, he reveals himself to them. But you need to read it from the **Bible** to get the full impact. And Joseph says to them,

Now therefore be not grieved, nor angry with yourselves, that ye sold me hither: for God did send me before you to preserve life. For these two years hath the famine been in the land: and yet there are five years, in the which there shall neither be earing (plowing) nor harvest. And God sent me before you to preserve you a posterity in the earth, and to save your lives by a great deliverance. So now it was not you that sent me hither, but God: and he hath made me a father to Pharaoh, and lord of all his house, and a ruler throughout all the land of Egypt.[\[21\]](#)

The famine in Egypt continues. Because Joseph knows the future he is able to invest in future markets. He buys up all the extra grain during the years of plenty, probably at a cheap price as there was great abundance. Later, as the famine continues, he is able to sell the grain at a higher price and literally buys up all the property in the land of Egypt and may have initiated the first income tax. Let's read from the **Bible**.

And Joseph placed his father and his brethren, and gave them a possession in the land of Egypt, in the best of the land, in the land of Rameses, as Pharaoh had commanded.

And Joseph nourished his father, and his brethren, and all his father's household, with bread, according to their families. And there was no bread in all the land; for the famine was very sore, so that the land of Egypt and all the land of Canaan fainted by reason of the famine. And Joseph gathered up all the money that was found in the land of Egypt, and in the land of Canaan, for the corn which they bought: and Joseph brought the money into Pharaoh's house.

And when money failed in the land of Egypt, and in the land of Canaan, all the Egyptians came unto Joseph, and said, Give us bread: for why should we die in thy presence? for the money fails. And Joseph said, Give your cattle; and I will give you for your cattle, if money fail. And they brought their cattle unto Joseph: and Joseph gave them bread in exchange for horses, and for the flocks, and for the cattle of the herds, and for the asses: and he fed them with bread for all their cattle for that year.

When that year was ended, they came unto him the second year, and said unto him, We will not hide it from my lord, how that our money is spent; my lord also hath our herds of cattle; there is not ought left in the sight of my lord, but our bodies, and our lands: Wherefore shall we die before thine eyes, both we and our land? buy us and our land for bread, and we and our land will be servants unto Pharaoh: and give us seed, that we may live, and not die, that the land be not desolate.

And Joseph bought all the land of Egypt for Pharaoh; for the Egyptians sold every man his field, because the famine prevailed over them: so the land became Pharaoh's. And as for the people, he removed them to cities from one end of the borders of Egypt even to the other end thereof. Only the land of the priests bought he not; for the priests had a portion assigned them of Pharaoh, and did eat their

portion which Pharaoh gave them: wherefore they sold not their lands. Then Joseph said unto the people, Behold, I have bought you this day and your land for Pharaoh: lo, here is seed for you, and ye shall sow the land. And it shall come to pass in the increase, that ye shall give the fifth part unto Pharaoh, and four parts shall be your own, for seed of the field, and for your food, and for them of your households, and for food for your little ones.

And they said, Thou hast saved our lives: let us find grace in the sight of my lord, and we will be Pharaoh's servants. And Joseph made it a law over the land of Egypt unto this day, that Pharaoh should have the fifth part, except the land of the priests only, which became not Pharaoh's.[\[22\]](#)

Let's compare the Biblical account of Joseph and the *Famine Stela* account of Imhotep. In the *Bible*, Joseph interprets Pharaoh's dream and saves Egypt from a seven-year famine. In the *Famine Stela*, Imhotep saves Egypt from a seven year famine by advising the Pharaoh. From the *Famine Stela*, we read that after the Pharaoh is informed by Imhotep, the Pharaoh has a dream about a solution and imposes a 10% tax. The *Bible* doesn't record anything of a dream by Pharaoh, but Joseph implements a 20% tax. One historical fact that we know for sure is that it was in the reign of Djoser when the Pharaohs first become financially capable to begin to build pyramids.[\[23\]](#)

Joseph's brethren and father and their wives go down into Egypt and Pharaoh gives them the best land to live on, the land of Goshen. Israel, Joseph's father, even gets to meet Pharaoh and prays a blessing over him. The *Bible* tells us,

And Israel dwelt in the land of Egypt, in the country of Goshen; and they had possessions therein, and grew, and multiplied exceedingly. And Jacob lived in the land of Egypt seventeen years: so the whole age of Jacob was an hundred forty and seven years.[\[24\]](#)

Here are some more observations on the Joseph/Imhotep connection. Imhotep designed the first step pyramid as Djoser's tomb, which was very similar to the temples made in Sumer. Imhotep was given credit in Egypt for building the first structures made entirely of stone. In paintings and statues Imhotep was also depicted as a young man with a scroll in his hand. Some believe that Imhotep invented Egyptian writing using a combination of hieroglyphics and the Sumerian syllabary form of writing.[\[25\]](#)

Is it possible that Abraham had in his possession a clay copy of the original pre-Flood and post-Flood records of *Genesis* given to him from Shem, who was still alive during Abraham's lifetime? If there were some written clay copies Joseph could have learned to "read" before going to Egypt. Or perhaps Joseph, using the oral tradition, had memorized the *Genesis* record up until his time. Because of his learning and position in Egypt, he was able to record the *Genesis* record that Moses would later edit under God's guidance. Another possibility is that Abraham could have learned "reading" during his time living with Noah and Shem in the area of Sumer and passed on this ability to his descendants Isaac, Jacob and Joseph.

According to the *Bible*, Joseph was thirty years[\[26\]](#) of age when he was made Prime Minister of Egypt and lived until he was one hundred and ten.[\[27\]](#) That means, Joseph could have been acting as political and religious leader under four different Pharaohs.[\[28\]](#)

If Imhotep was Joseph then he would have been ruling from the time he was thirty until let's say nearly eighty-five years old. We have modern day business magnets and religious leaders like the Pope who keep their position of power even until that age. So again, the correlation is possible. The fact that Imhotep's tomb has never been found, although other architects' tombs have been found, fits in nicely with the Biblical story.[\[29\]](#) If Imhotep was indeed Joseph, we would not expect to find his tomb, or at least not a big elaborate one in traditional Egyptian fashion. Why? Because when Joseph died, he asked his descendants when in the

future they would leave left Egypt to take his body back to Canaan and bury him with his parents. The **Bible** records that when the children of Israel some four hundred years later depart from Egypt, they take Joseph's body.

And Moses took the bones of Joseph with him: for he (Joseph) had straightly sworn the children of Israel, saying, God will surely visit you; and ye shall carry up my bones away hence with you. [\[30\]](#)

Why do we not hear about the Joseph-Imhotep connection or its possibility in modern history books? Some scholars believe that the powers that be within today's American educational, historical and scientific community are not interested in this sort of information becoming public knowledge, as it gives credence to the Biblical narrative. Like I quoted earlier, they "*cannot allow a divine foot in the door.*"

As for the **Famine Stela**, scientists consider it a forgery from some three hundred years later after the famous famine. But forgeries usually are pretty close to the truth so that they pass as the real thing. It seems the priesthood, some three hundred years after Imhotep, did not want the Pharaohs to forget history. They wanted the Pharaohs to remember that it was Imhotep, a High Priest, who was responsible for the seven-year miracle that saved Egypt from famine.

Whether the **Famine Stela** is a forgery or not is really beside the question. The fact is that it is an ancient hieroglyphic inscription and should be given as equal consideration as any other ancient artifact and not dismissed off-hand because of its content gives historicity to the Biblical narrative. One thing we know for sure is that during the reign of Djoser, the Pharaoh suddenly had enough wealth and power to begin the building of gigantic public work projects to himself.

Another interesting point is that the name Djoser could be broken up into two parts, "De Joser" or "of José" as we would say

in Spanish or Portuguese. The meaning would be “of Joseph.” Since Imhotep was more important than Pharaoh because he had saved the country, could that fact have caused the Pharaoh himself to be remembered as “of Joseph” or Djoser? Egyptian records show that during his reign he was called Netjerikhet. It was only some years after his death that he was given the name Djoser.[31]

If Imhotep was indeed Joseph, this could account for his extraordinary abilities above and beyond those of the normal or upper-class Egyptians. The *Bible* shows Lot, Abraham's nephew, as a magistrate in Sodom, and Abraham, Joseph's great-grandfather, as an important tribal and military leader. Moreover, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob could have known Shem. The book of Jasher has Abraham living with Noah and Shem for 39 years.[32]

During those years Abraham could have learned much of the pre-Flood world including technology and medicine. He could have later passed his learning on to Isaac and Jacob, who eventually passed it on to Joseph. Besides the spiritual advantages from having learned from his forefathers the importance of maintaining the true God in his understanding and life, Joseph could also have acquired knowledge of Sumerian writing from his fore-fathers. They had dwelt in Sumer before migrating to Canaan and later into Egypt.

The fact that Egypt developed the first practical way of saving information and that all the wealth was in the hands of the Pharaoh may have been the reason for Egypt becoming the first “World Empire.” As we say today, “information is power.”

The reason Egypt was able to store information may have been because Egypt adopted a new system of writing that was very similar to the system used by the Sumerians. At the same time that they were adopting this imported writing method from Sumer, they were also adopting the Sumerian idea of step pyramids. All this was happening under the guidance of one man: Imhotep.

The ancient Sumerians had a history of experimental medicine; Imhotep was later deified for his contributions to medicine. It is left as an exercise for the reader to discover in what other ways this match might help explain Egypt's sudden and historic rise to power. [\[33\]](#)

The Joseph-Imhotep connection is quite an amazing possibility and leaves me wondering if the famous Imhotep of Egyptian history was in fact our very own Joseph.

As you remember, Joseph's father Jacob or Israel finally went down into Egypt during the famous seven-year famine. Like other patriarchs before him, he prays a blessing over his children before his death. Amazingly, Jacob gives a remarkable prophecy about his son Judah. Remember, the ***Bible*** is no ordinary book because it is a book of accurate prophecy. Here's what Jacob prophesied about Judah, from whose name we get the term "Jews," as his tribe became the most dominant and the one from whom Israel's most famous kings descend from.

Judah, thou art he whom thy brethren shall praise: thy hand shall be in the neck of thine enemies; thy father's children shall bow down before thee. Judah is a lion's whelp: from the prey, my son, thou art gone up: he stooped down, he couched as a lion, and as an old lion; who shall rouse him up? The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be. [\[34\]](#)

As you may remember, King David of the tribe of Judah was the first really strong King of a united Israel some five hundred years after the above prophecy. Saul, the first King, was of the tribe of Benjamin. But because of his disobedience to the Lord the kingdom was given to David. David also was a mighty warrior who fought off the Philistines and other enemies and gave the kingdom its initial statehood.

The Kings of Judah were all descendents of David, as was Jesus of Nazareth. The reference to Shiloh in the verse above is referring to the Messiah. Jesus' genealogy is traced back to David in both *Matthew* and *Luke*.

We have seen that Daniel was a good student while in Babylon. No doubt he was also a good student before going into captivity. As a worthy *Bible* student, he would have been familiar with Joseph's history and how God used him to influence the Pharaoh for good and to save lives. Knowing Joseph's history would have given Daniel and his mates the faith they needed to know that God was with them. They, too, could influence the King for good and to save lives, just like Joseph had done before them.

Paul tells us,

For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope.[\[35\]](#)

In other words, Paul is telling us that the histories in the *Bible* are written to give us knowledge of the past so that we can learn from them and therefore have patience and find comfort through them. The histories in the *Bible* show us God's care for those that love Him. They give us faith and faith in turn gives us hope for the present and hope for the future. Daniel and his friends received faith through the Biblical histories they had put to heart as Jewish youths. Those histories gave them faith which then translated in their time of trial and testing into hope for the present and hope for the future.

The *Bible* histories and truths can do the same for us today. That is one of the reason I am putting so much *Bible* in the text. Because reading and hearing God's Word can help you to find faith. Faith can in turn give you hope for your present situation and hope for the future. Even if things are looking bleak at the moment and they may become worse in the future, remember,

So then faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.[\[36\]](#)

Are you low in faith? Maybe you need to rekindle your faith by spending time reading the ‘Book of Books,’ the ***Bible***. Many a great men of the past have spent time reading the ***Bible***. Let us list some:

John Quincy Adams, the 6th President of the United States, who lived from 1767-1848, said the following:

The first and almost only book deserving of universal attention is the Bible. I speak as a man of the world. So great is my veneration for the Bible, that the earlier my children begin to read it, the confident will be my hope that they will prove useful citizens of their country and respectable members of society. I have for many years made it a practice to read through the Bible once every year.[\[37\]](#)

Theodore Roosevelt, 26th President who lived from 1858-1919, had similar thoughts.

A thorough knowledge of the Bible is worth more than a college education. Almost every man who has by his lifework added to the sum of human achievement ... has based his lifework largely upon the teachings of the Bible.[\[38\]](#)

Abraham Lincoln, the 16th President and who lived from 1809-1865, said the following:

I can see how it is possible for a man to look down upon the earth and be an atheist, but I cannot conceive how he could look up into the heavens and say, there is no God.[\[39\]](#)

In regards to this great book (the Bible), I have but to say it is the best gift God has given to man. All the good the Savior gave the world was communicated through this book. But for it we could not know right from wrong. All things most desirable for man's welfare, here, and hereafter, are found portrayed in it.^[40]

In the next chapter we will read of another famous man who also was an avid **Bible** student.

Notes:

- [1] [Genesis 37:3-11](#)
- [2] [Genesis 28:12-15](#)
- [3] [Luke 2:7-19](#)
- [4] [Genesis 39:20-23](#)
- [5] [Genesis 40:14-15](#)
- [6] [Genesis 40:23](#)
- [7] [Genesis 41:7-8](#)
- [8] [Genesis 41:14-16](#)
- [9] [Genesis 41: 41-44](#)
- [10] <https://josephandisraelinegypt.wordpress.com/feature-article-imhotep-and-joseph-are-the-same-person/> (accessed 03/2016)
- [11] [Genesis 41:45-46](#)
- [12] http://creationwiki.org/Joseph_and_Imhotep (03/2016)
- [13] http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Famine_Stela (03/2016)
- [14] Richard Lewontin. "Billions and Billions of Demons," New York Review, January 9, 1997, p. 31. <http://creation.com/amazing-admission-lewontin-quote>
- [15] Bill Cooper, *After the Flood*, New Wine Press, UK, 1995, p.75. http://www.goodreads.com/book/show/433064.After_The_Flood
- [16] http://www.dstoner.net/Genesis_Context/Context.html (03/16)
- [17] [Ibid](#)
- [18] [Ibid](#)
- [19] [Genesis 41:47-49](#)
- [20] [Genesis 41:53-57](#)
- [21] [Genesis 45:5-8](#)
- [22] [Genesis 47:11-26](#)
- [23] http://www.dstoner.net/Genesis_Context/Context.html (03/2016)
- [24] [Genesis 47:27-28](#)
- [25] http://www.dstoner.net/Genesis_Context/Context.html (03/2016)

- [26] [Genesis 41:46](#) And Joseph was thirty years old when he stood before Pharaoh King of Egypt. And Joseph went out from the presence of Pharaoh, and went throughout all the land of Egypt.
- [27] [Genesis 50:22,26](#) And Joseph dwelt in Egypt, he, and his father's house: and Joseph lived an hundred and ten years. So Joseph died, being an hundred and ten years old: and they embalmed him, and he was put in a coffin in Egypt.
- [28] http://www.dstoner.net/Genesis_Context/Context.html (03/2016)
- [29] <https://josephandisraelinegypt.wordpress.com/2014/01/23/the-tomb-of-imhotep-found-the-coffin-was-empty-and-orientated-to-the-north/> (03/2016)
- [30] [Exodus 13:19](#)
- [31] <http://www.ancientegyptonline.co.uk/djoser.html> (accessed 03/2016)
- [32] <http://weareisrael.org/2012/05/08/noah-and-abraham/> and http://www.chabad.org/library/article_cdo/aid/112063/jewish/Abrahams-Early-Life.htm (accessed 03/2016)
- [33] http://www.dstoner.net/Genesis_Context/Context.html (03/2016)
- [34] [Genesis 49:8-10](#)
- [35] [Romans 15:4](#)
- [36] [Romans 10:17](#)
- [37] http://www.tonycooke.org/stories-and-illustrations/great_statements/ (accessed 03/2016)
- [38] <http://www.phatmass.com/phorum/topic/125345-list-of-20th-century-us-presidential-quotes-about-the-bible-1901-20/> (accessed 03/2016)
- [39] <http://www.goodreads.com/quotes/131220-i-can-see-how-it-might-be-possible-for-a>. (accessed 03/2016)
- [40] <http://www.goodreads.com/quotes/392563-in-regards-to-this-great-book-the-bible-i-have> (accessed 03/2016)

Chapter 12

The Daniel – Isaac Newton Connection

Isaac Newton, who lived from 1642-1727, is known as one of the world's greatest scientists. But not many people know he was fascinated with the book of *Daniel*. He was a devout Christian, and *Bible* scholar who studied the *Old Testament* in the original Hebrew.

At the end of his days he spent more time studying and writing about the prophecies in the book of Daniel than he did in charting the heavens.[\[1\]](#)

But prophecy is not something we can figure out with our own understanding; it is something that God reveals or opens up to our understanding.

The secret things belong unto the Lord our God: but the things that are revealed belong unto us and to our children forever, that we may do all the words of the law.[\[2\]](#)

Daniel, himself, was even puzzled by some of the prophecies he received. In fact, in the last chapter of *Daniel*, after having had a vision and having received a prophecy, Daniel says,

And I heard, but I understood not: then said I, O my Lord, what shall be the end of these things? And he said, Go thy way, Daniel: for the words are closed up and sealed until the time of the end.[\[3\]](#)

If we go back earlier in the chapter we find a similar declaration from the Lord:

But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro and knowledge shall be increased.[\[4\]](#)

Try as they might, neither Daniel nor Isaac Newton could properly understand the ***Daniel*** prophecies. I believe we today have better understanding of the ***Daniel*** prophecies than Daniel and Isaac Newton had, because we are closer in time to the fulfillment of those end-time events.

Many ***Bible*** scholars believe today's vast modern transportation system of planes, trains and cars is a fulfillment of the second part of the verse of "***many shall run to and fro.***" An interesting side note is that when Isaac Newton was alive, he predicted that in the future man would be able to travel at speeds as fast as fifty-miles-an-hour. Voltaire, the famous French skeptic, said,

Now look at that mighty mind of Newton who studied gravitation. When he became an old man and got into his second childhood, he began to study the book that is called the Bible. And it seems in order to credit its fabulous nonsense we must believe that the knowledge of mankind will be so increased that he will be able to travel at the rate of 50 miles an hour. The poor dullard! No man can travel at the rate of 30 miles an hour and get his breath![\[5\]](#)

Now we know that Voltaire was indeed the "poor dotard," and not Newton.

The fact that the average person has access to an innumerable amount of knowledge through today's computerized world is surely a fulfillment of "***knowledge shall be increased.***" It behooves us, therefore, to study the Scriptures diligently like Isaac Newton, and like those in the city of Berea of whom Paul spoke,

These were nobler than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.[\[6\]](#)

Please do not take my word for it. Get out your ***Bible***, read, study, fast, pray and ask God to open up His Word to you.

Open thou mine eyes, that I may behold wondrous things out of thy law.[\[7\]](#)

Notes:

[1] Garraty, John Arthur and Gray, Peter; ***The Columbia History of the World***, Harper and Row, 1972.

[2] [Deuteronomy 29:29](#)

[3] [Daniel 12:8-9](#)

[4] [Daniel 12:4](#)

[5] <http://www.theinformedservant.com/newton-voltaire-and-the-privilege-of-hindsight/> (accessed 03/2016)

[6] [Acts 17:11](#)

[7] [Psalm 119:18](#)

Chapter 13

Jesus, the Book of Daniel and the Temple Institute

The book of *Daniel* not only contains many specific prophecies about the latter days, but also one that even Jesus Himself mentions to His disciples when talking about the end of the world:

When you therefore shall see the abomination of desolation spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso reads, let him understand) then let them which be in Judah flee into the mountains: ... For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.[\[1\]](#)

The fact that Jesus quotes from *Daniel* should motivate us to do a bit of study on the subject. Some eschatologists believe “*the holy place*” that Jesus was talking about could be a rebuilt Jewish temple on the Temple Mount. Presently in Jerusalem there exists an organization called the [Temple Institute](#) which is preparing for the eventual rebuilding of a Jewish Temple on the Temple Mount in Jerusalem, where today stands the Muslim’s Mosque of Omar. Read the following introduction to their site:

SHALOM AND WELCOME to the official website of the TEMPLE INSTITUTE in Jerusalem, Israel. The Temple Institute is dedicated to every aspect of the Holy Temple of Jerusalem, and the central role it fulfilled, and will once again fulfill, in the spiritual well being of both Israel and all the nations of the world. The Institute's work touches upon the history of the Holy Temple's past, an understanding of the present day, and the Divine promise of Israel's future. The Institute's activities include education, research, and development. The Temple Institute's ultimate goal is to see Israel rebuild the Holy

Temple on Mount Moriah in Jerusalem, in accord with the Biblical commandments.[\[2\]](#)

Following the Six-Day War of 1967, *Christianity Today* published an article saying,

Israeli government representatives have ordered 60,000 tons of the finest Bedford stone from Bedford, Indiana to be used in the erection of the Jerusalem Temple....The cornerstones for the Third Temple are already in Israel. Materials for this Temple have been secretly in preparations for seven years.[\[3\]](#)

The Temple Institute argues that the above report is false. They say that the abundance of stones available in Israel makes the report highly unlikely. However, they do not deny the possibility of the stones having been already cut and prepared. If true, the stones necessary for the rebuilding of the Temple could be present in Israel at this very moment and could be assembled in a short period of time. All the various Temple ornaments have been carefully created in conformity with the instructions given by Moses for the original items.[\[4\]](#)

In a recent news article The Temple Institute has announced the opening of a training school for Levitical priests necessary to the services in the new Temple.[\[5\]](#) Another news article, "*Preparing for the Third Temple*," reinforces the ideas of the Temple Institute.

The author of the article, Daniel Ben Simon, goes on a visit to the Jewish Quarter of Old Jerusalem to see what preparations are being made for the building of the new Temple. For many Israelis the building of the Third Temple has become an all-consuming passion and work. They believe that the time may be just right for its establishment and want to do all they can to hasten the day when it will stand where the First and Second Temples once stood.

One of the elite soldiers of the Temple who has dedicated his life to the Third Temple's construction is Yehuda Glick. Since moving from New York to Israel, Glick has been preparing for the great day when the building will be constructed. The Temple will be the Jewish people's most holy place on earth. Until then, he spends his time as a Temple Mount activist and serves as a tour guide to foreign visitors.

To Glick, there is no greater sensation in life than walking on the ground of the Temple Mount where Abraham offered sacrifice to God. Glick believes that the state of Israel is a Divine move, and the culminating manifestation of that Divine move will be the construction of the Third Temple on the Temple Mount.[\[6\]](#)

In similar fashion, the Jewish community of Shiloh, where the original Tabernacle stood before the building of the First Temple, is carefully sewing the veil of the Temple. The veil will be needed to enclose the "Holy of Holies." The "Holy of Holies" is the area of the Temple where only the High Priest is able to enter, and only on one specific day of the year. Here's a section of an article from May 2014 found in the magazine *Israel Today* called "*Jewish Women Recreating Temple Veil.*"

If the Jewish Temple is ever to be rebuilt in Jerusalem, the massive curtain—66 feet high by 33 feet wide and 2 inches thick—that once hung in the Second Temple and was consumed by fire in A.D. 70, will need to be recreated. That task is already underway in the Jewish community of Shiloh, located in biblical Samaria about 40 minutes north of Jerusalem, reports Israel Today. For more than two years women from the community have been working to assemble the materials and learn the techniques needed to weave the veil that will hang between, and separate, the Holy Place and the Holy of Holies.[\[7\]](#)

The Orthodox Jews who are preparing for the Temple's reconstruction obviously take prophecy seriously. Many Christian ***Bible*** scholars agree that the reconstruction of the Third

Temple is one of the main end-time events which ushers in the last three and half year period of world history known as the Great Tribulation. Are you aware of the prophecies concerning the rebuilding of the Temple and the beginning of animal sacrifices by the Jews on the Temple Mount? Are you aware of the Holy Covenant which seems to bring about the peace agreement in the Middle East? Do you know what the breaking of the covenant signifies, or in other words, who will break the covenant and what will happen afterwards? If you took ***Bible*** prophecy seriously, you would not be answerless and empty-headed when asked these questions.

Notes:

- [1] [Matthew 24:15,16 & 21](#)
- [2] <https://www.templeinstitute.org/> (accessed 03/2016)
- [3] <http://www.biblebelievers.org.au/temple.htm> (accessed 03/2016)
- [4] <http://www.templemount.org/tempprep.html> (accessed 03/2016)
- [5] <http://www.israelnationalnews.com/News/News.aspx/215910> (08/2016)
- [6] Daniel Ben Simon, "[*Preparing For The Third Temple.*](#)" Al-Monitor Israel Pulse, June 7, 2013 (accessed 03/2016)
- [7] Israel Today, "[*Jewish Woman Recreating Temple Veil.*](#)" May 28, 2014.

Chapter 14

The Genesis Messianic Prophecy

We have seen so far that the **Bible** is indeed a book of prophecy. One scholar has determined that 26.8% of the **Bible** is prophecy.^[1] That's over 8,000 verses. If God didn't want us to know the future, why did He spend so much of His Word prophesying? In the **Old Testament** we have seventeen books which are almost nothing but prophecy and as such are called the Major and Minor Prophets. The other twenty-two books of the **Old Testament**, from **Genesis** to the **Song of Solomon** contain hundreds of specific prophecies within their histories and poetry.

The first Messianic prophecy, or prophecy about the Messiah, is found in **Genesis**, the book of beginnings. While in the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve disobey God after listening to the Devil-serpent. God, when stating His judgment upon them says,

And I will put enmity between thee (the Devil-serpent) and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.^[2]

Christian **Bible** scholars have interpreted this prophecy in the following way. The Messiah, the seed of the woman, would one day defeat the serpent, the Devil, although the serpent would be able to bruise, or kill the Messiah. The fact that the serpent's head is crushed shows total defeat, seen in Christ's victory over death in His resurrection and His ultimate defeat of Satan at the end of time. The implication of the woman's seed being bruised by the serpent shows the Devil's power to persecute and even kill the Redeemer and His representatives. However, because the bruise is to the heel, the defeat is minor and not an ultimate victory. As Jesus said,

And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear Him which is able to destroy both soul and body in Hell.[\[3\]](#)

The non-violent protest movement to affect political change has been based on this idea of standing up for the truth even in the face of danger to one's own safety or life, as exemplified by Christ. Many people have died in non-violent protests because of this principle. Mahatma Gandhi used it to change an Empire. Dr. Martin Luther King Jr. used it to change a nation.

In a more recent example, on March 16, 2003, a young American peace activist named Rachel Corrie was crushed to death by an Israeli bulldozer. Corrie was undertaking a non-violent protest to protect the home of a Palestinian family from being demolished. The Israeli military was destroying all buildings within one hundred meters of the security fence they had constructed. In 2005, the Corrie family took the Israeli military to court over the incident. However, in 2012, a lower Israeli court ruled in favor of the Israeli military. Rachel's parents have appealed to Israel's Supreme Court, who has yet to make a decision.[\[4\]](#)

Similar to Rachel, scientist Dr. George Ellis believes non-violence is the best path.[\[5\]](#) Ellis, who worked with Dr. Stephen Hawking on the Big Bang cosmology, is also a Quaker and against war. He believes that non-violence can even be applied in difficult situations. After winning the renowned [Templeton Prize](#),[\[6\]](#) he received an e-mail from a former British soldier who had been on a peace-keeping duty in Aden, Yemen in 1967. The name of the man was Davie Christie.

Mr. Christie said he had been an officer in a Scottish battalion engaged in peace-keeping duties in Aden town in the year 1967, in what is now called Yemen. He compared the situation to that of Iraq where people were being killed daily, with those suffering the most being the innocent local population. Mr. Christie admits

his battalion of the British Army had the military capacity to destroy the whole town of Aden if they wanted to. But something unusual happened that needs to be publicized.

They had a commanding officer who refused to let them return fire when they were attacked, unless they were absolutely positive the person they were firing at had been the person who had actually thrown a grenade or had fired a shot at them. He did not want to kill any innocent people. He didn't want any "collateral damage."

But that's difficult to do, to hold your fire when you are under attack. Nevertheless, that's exactly what this particular battalion did. They held their fire unless they were 100% sure they were firing at the perpetrator, that they were firing at the actual attacker. Even with over a hundred grenades thrown at them, they fired back a grand total of two shots, killing one grenade-thrower.

Did they suffer losses? Yes, they did. They had over 100 men wounded and even one killed. When they were the recipients of rock-throwing, they stood fast. When it was grenades, they hit the ground and after the dust settled, they got up, stood their ground and held fast. They did not react indiscriminately in anger.

Of course, their reaction was not anticipated. Their enemy wanted them to fire back. They wanted them to kill innocent people. If they did, the local people's animosity would be raised against them, the British peacekeeping force. But that is not what happened.

Slowly the local people began to trust the peacekeeping force. The local people saw they were taking injuries and not firing back into the crowded streets filled with innocent men, woman and children. As a result, the local people themselves made it clear to the terrorists that they were not welcomed in that area of Aden town.

While Mr. Christie's battalion was playing soccer with the local people, other British battalions who had not followed what I will call the "turn-the-other-cheek philosophy," were having a very difficult time. However, that one Scottish battalion brought peace to their area. They brought peace by being peacemakers because they were willing to lay down their lives rather than kill innocent people. Though they held the superior physical power, they withheld using that power in the face of terrorist attacks in order to protect innocent lives. The peace they achieved came because of the faith and outlook of the commanding officer. He in turn passed on that faith and outlook to those in his command.

Mr. Christie testifies that the commanding officer was a man they admired. They knew he was ready to die for each and every soldier under his command. As a result, each soldier was prepared to die for their commanding officer. Some may say, as Christie notes, that they were merely obeying orders. But he goes on to say, he does not believe it was the case. He confesses that they actually came to love their commanding officer. His heart for peacemaking and his determination to succeed in cruel and unjust circumstances regardless of the cost began to gradually grow in the hearts of the men in his command. Only years later did the soldiers themselves realize what they had accomplished.^[7]

Dr. Ellis believes that Christian principles can be applied even in areas of conflict, such as the one above. If we did, some of the most amazing things could occur.

Throughout history the prophets of God used non-violent protests and suffered ridicule, abuse and even death because of their faith and world outlook. But all the way back in the first book of the *Bible*, we see the first prophecy of the Messiah's triumphant victory over evil and Satan. We see also the initiating of the spiritual warfare of good against evil which continues until today.

Notes:

[1] Salus, Bill; <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GKOKqCk5vuo> (03/16)

- [2] [Genesis 3:15](#)
- [3] [Matthew 10:28](#)
- [4] <http://rachelcorriefoundation.org/> (accessed 03/2016)
- [5] https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/George_F._R._Ellis (03/2016)
- [6] https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Templeton_Prize (03/2016)
- [7] http://www.onbeing.org/program/science-and-hope/transcript/1158#main_content (accessed 03/2016)

Chapter 15

Bible Prophecy – Mathematically Impossible!

At the end of the *New Testament* in the first verse in the book of *Revelation*, we find the following words,

The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to show to his servants things which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified by his angel unto his servant John.[\[1\]](#)

At the end of the revelation, John tries to worship the angel who brought him the end-time message. The angel says,

See you do it not: I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.[\[2\]](#)

A testimony is a document that confirms the will of the testifier: like a person's will is a document giving evidence or proof or testament to his desires. The spirit of prophecy found in the *Bible* is the testament or proof or evidence that Jesus is God. The accuracy of God's prophecies confirms or testifies that Jesus is the Christ. The accuracy of God's prophecies confirms or testifies to the fact that the *Bible* is true.

In my condensed *Bible* concordance, I can find some forty-eight *Old Testament* Messianic prophecies, or prophecies concerning the coming of the Jewish Messiah, all of which were fulfilled in the life, death and resurrection of Jesus Christ. Nowhere in all of ancient Greek and Latin literature can there be found any real specific prophecy of a great historical event to come in the distant future. To the contrary, the *Bible* is full of countless, detailed, specific prophecies, all of which have been miraculously fulfilled and come true—except the final end-time

prophecies which are either to be fulfilled in the near future or are coming to pass right now.

In 1957, Peter W. Stoner, a university professor at Pasadena City College in California, asked his twelve college classes what would be the chance of one person fulfilling forty-eight of the approximately 325 Messianic prophecies randomly? His book titled *SCIENCE SPEAKS: An Evaluation of Certain Christian Evidences* goes over the results.[\[3\]](#)

First Professor Stoner, with the help of the students from the twelve different classes, estimated the odds for just eight of the Messianic prophecies being fulfilled by one man. They made reasonable and conservative estimates which the students agreed upon unanimously.[\[4\]](#)

For example, they tried to figure out the odds of a child born in Bethlehem at the beginning of the first century becoming the Messiah. What were the odds of three wise men would come from the east and bestow gifts on the child and his family? What were the odds that they same child would escape the slaying of the male children of Bethlehem by Herod the Great? What were the odds of that child traveling specifically to Egypt and then returning later to live in Nazareth so that later he would be called a Nazarene?

Stoner then took the average result for each of the possible eight prophecies calculated by the twelve different classes. By multiplying the probability that was found for one of the prophecies by the other seven prophecies, he came up with the probability of one man fulfilling all eight prophecies. Making the reasonable and conservative assumption that the other forty prophetic possibilities would have nearly the same rate of probability, he did the math. He found that the odds of one person fulfilling all forty-eight prophecies would be one in 10 to the 157th power or one over 10 followed by 157 zeros, or one chance out of

**10,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,
000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000000,000,000,000,
000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000000,000,000,000,000,000,
000,000,000,000,000.**

Mathematicians state that a number with a probability of 10 to the negative 50th power, or one in 10 to the fiftieth power is impossible.[\[5\]](#) Therefore, one times 10 to the negative 157th power would be even less possible. Scientists have calculated the number of electrons in the universe to be around one times 10 to the 80th power. So fulfilling forty-eight Messianic prophecies would be like the possibility of finding, on the very first attempt, one specific electron out of all of the electrons in all the known mass of the entire universe![\[6\]](#) It's just beyond possibility for one person to accidentally fulfill all forty-eight prophecies of the some 325 total Messianic prophecies found in the ***Bible***. Nevertheless, Jesus did it.

Attorney Lee Stroebel was the former agnostic journalist with the *Chicago Tribune*, who had received Illinois' highest honor for public service in investigating reporting from United Press International. He said in 2007, that statistical information presented in Professor Stoner's *Science Speaks* about the Messianic prophecies was one of the major factors which gave him confidence to believe in Christ. Lee went on to become a *New York Times* besting-selling author with his books: *The Case for Christ*, *The Case for Faith* and *The Case for Easter*.^[7]

Notes:

- [1] [Revelation 1:1](#)
- [2] [Revelation 19:10](#)
- [3] Peter W. Stoner; *Science Speaks*; Moody Press; Chicago, Illinois; 1957
- [4] <http://www.bereanpublishers.com/the-odds-of-eight-messianic-prophecies-coming-true/> (accessed 03/2016)
- [5] <http://www.talkorigins.org/faqs/abioprob/borelfaq.html> (accessed 03/2016)
- [6] <http://jvmi.co.uk/who-is-yeshua/reasons-to-believe/prophecies.html> (03/2016)
- [7] <http://www.leestrobels.com/Bio.php> (accessed 03/2016)

Chapter 16

The Noah Prophecy

The Lord said through Isaiah,

Seek ye out of the book of the LORD, and read: no one of these shall fail, none shall want her mate: for my mouth it hath commanded, and his spirit it hath gathered them.[\[1\]](#)

Later the Lord says,

I am the LORD: that is my name: and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images. Behold, the former things are come to pass, and new things do I declare: before they spring forth I tell you of them.[\[2\]](#)

I would like to give some examples of a few of the hundreds of amazing fulfilled prophecies found in the **Bible**. It will strengthen your faith and help you to believe He will fulfill the remaining prophecies.

The book of **Genesis** has some of the most interesting prophecies made about the descendants of the great fore-fathers of faith. We will look at one which Noah prophesized over his three sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth. Looking through the genealogies of these men, we find that Shem was the father of both the Jewish and Arab nations and all their mixtures. Ham was the father of Black African nations, the word “Ham” meaning black, while Japheth was the father of all the northern European nations or Caucasian “Gentile” nations.

Let’s look at the prophecy which took place after the flood:

And he said, Cursed be Canaan; a servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren. And he said, Blessed be the LORD God of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant. God shall enlarge Japheth, and he shall dwell in the tents of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant.[\[3\]](#)

Canaan, the son of Ham, is cursed for what some believe may have been a sexual act by Ham upon his father Noah. Shem is blessed, while Canaan is made his servant. Japheth's dwelling place or dominion would be enlarged, yet he would still live in housing owned by Shem. Still, Canaan would be Japheth's servant, also.

Has this prophecy been fulfilled? Yes, with 100% accuracy. Shem's descendants are the Jewish and Arab peoples. The Black Africans are found in many of the Arab nations working at menial jobs. The Black Africans also work in menial jobs in many Western nations, where Jewish money and expertise has given the Jewish people unprecedented power. In fact, the Jewish people have dominated every area of human enterprise that they have put their hand to, especially finances and banking. No one would dispute that the Black African nations are the servants of International Banks who are largely owned by Jewish money.

So, Canaan, the Black African people, is definitely servant to Shem in the Arab and Jewish peoples and to Japheth in the Gentile people who are largely the Caucasian people. In the third part of the prophecy, we see that Japheth, the father of the northern European nations, has become very large in land area, including North America and Australia. Nevertheless, his brother Shem or Jewish money still controls his housing and financing situation, just like the prophecies predicted: ***“he shall dwell in the tents of Shem.”*** Canaan's descendants, the peoples of Black Africa, have also traditionally been the servants of the Caucasian peoples, the descendants of Japheth, just like they have been servants to the descendents of Shem, the Jewish and Arab peoples.

I have even seen an interesting study from the book *Abraham's Children: Race, Identity and the DNA of the Chosen People* by Dr. Jon Entine.^[4] He claims that DNA tests of important Black African leaders seem to indicate that many if not most have Jewish DNA. The Black Africans who become important leaders in Africa are almost always those with significant amounts of Jewish DNA. Entine also puts forth the possibility of Jewish descendents being the architects of the famous Great Zimbabwe; an archaeological ruin in Zimbabwe built around 1100 AD. The origins and architectures of the Great Zimbabwe have been a controversy over the years, which some politically-correct archaeologists have credited to the Black Africans. Entine thinks otherwise and gives the credit to Jewish ingenuity.^[5]

Notes:

[1] [Isaiah 34:16](#)

[2] [Isaiah 42:8-9](#)

[3] [Genesis 9:25-27](#)

[4] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ioYAjdDALqk> (accessed 03/2016)

[5] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=-Lgk9LHqCjA> (accessed 03/2016)

Chapter 17

The Wild Man Prophecy

Most everyone knows that Abraham is the father of both the Jewish and Arab nations. However, most people do not realize that both Jews and Arabs are descendents of Shem. In fact, according to Biblical chronology, Shem and Abraham's lives overlap by about 100 years. So Abraham could have known Shem. Some ***Bible*** scholars believe that Melchizedek to whom Abraham gave tithes after the battle of Chedorlaomer was in fact Shem.[\[1\]](#) The point I am trying to make here is that both Jews and Arabs are "Shemites" or Semites, that is, descendants of Shem. The word anti-Semitism comes from Shem's name. Since both Arabs and Jews are "Shemites" or Semites, the word anti-Semitism should mean those who are prejudice to both Arabs and Jews. Instead it is used exclusively to designate hatred or prejudice toward the Jewish people.

According to ***Wikipedia***, the word anti-Semitism was first used

in the late 19th century in Germany as a more scientific-sounding term for Judenhass or Jew-hatred.[\[2\]](#)

In any event, Abraham is the father of the Jewish people through Isaac, the son of Abraham's wife Sarah. But Abraham is also the father of the Arab nations through Ishmael, his son through his wife's handmaiden Hagar. Ishmael was actually older than Isaac. Because of the jealousy which was arising between Hagar and Sarah, and ultimately between their descendants, Sarah asks Abraham to put away both Hagar and her son Ishmael. Abraham laments, but God tells him to yield to his wife's request.

Hagar and her son are put out of the camp and wander in the desert. In her desperation Hagar calls out to the Lord for help and

He helps her. The angel responsible for her rescue prophesizes over Ishmael saying,

And he will be a wild man; his hand will be against every man, and every man's hand against him; and he shall dwell in the presence of all his brethren.[\[3\]](#)

The Lord also says,

For I will make him a great nation.[\[4\]](#)

And later:

These are the sons of Ishmael, and these are their names, by their towns, and by their castles (or encampments); twelve princes according to their nations.[\[5\]](#)

Have the Arab nations been traditionally “*a wild man?*” Surely their manner of spreading their Islam faith during the time of Mohammed was by violence. Also, since they are a tribal people, each tribe tends to keep to themselves and have strong tribal preferences. Therefore, even though they are brothers, they find it hard to agree and have throughout history been in constant squabbles among themselves, which we even see today in the Sunni-Shiite division. We see it in the “liberated” nations of Iraq and Libya. Without a strong man dictator to force the different tribal areas to work together, the country soon falls into chaos, with every man's hand against each other.

The Israelis, realizing that the Arabs are often against each other, have used the fact to their advantage in the Middle East conflict. Because of their knowledge of the Arab weakness, they have been able to prevent some attempted unions by Arab leaders which could have proved dangerous to Israel's national security. Secret documents have shown that the Mossad, the Israeli equivalent to the CIA, have used the philosophy of divide-and-conquer as their foreign policy using their expert intelligence to foment division among the Arab nations. As long as the Arab

nations are fighting among themselves, Israel's security is safe and Israel becomes the most dominant military power in the area.

On June 25, 2014, blogger Brandon Martinez wrote the following on his website commenting on the fighting in Iraq between the different Muslim groups, confirming Israel's policy:

On the June 22 edition of NBC's Meet the Press, Israel's Prime Minister Benjamin Netanyahu let slip his government's intention to divide and conquer the Middle East. Remarking on the latest ISIS (Islamic State of Iraq and Syria) incursions into Iraq, Netanyahu expressed the desire of his regime to promote internal strife in Israel's neighboring states.

"We must weaken both [Sunni and Shia Muslims],"

Netanyahu said, implying that it is in Israel's interests to have Muslims fighting and squabbling amongst themselves.

"When your enemies are fighting each other, don't strengthen either one of them, weaken both," said the Israeli leader.

Martinez continues,

That is what ISIS was created to do. The terrorist militia's American, Israeli and Saudi backers are content to see these roving bands of malcontents and marauders behead their way to Damascus and Baghdad. What better way to solidify Israel's position as the sole hegemony in the region? Fragmenting, weakening and Balkanizing the Middle East has been part-and-parcel of the Israeli impulse from the very beginnings of the Jewish state.[\[6\]](#)

Martinez brings to our attention that oddly enough, back in 1982, Israeli military strategist Oded Yinon had written a paper

called, *“A Strategy for Israel in the 1980s.”*^[7] At the time Iraq was Israel’s most powerful and potential adversary and Israel’s greatest threat. Yinon, therefore, advocated the territorial dissection of Iraq into three states. Each state would be based on ethnic and confessional roots, namely Kurds, Shiites and Sunnis. Yinon promoted the same scenario for the other Arab/Muslim states surrounding Israel, including Syria, Egypt, Lebanon and Iran.

Some experts claim the idea of a Middle East divided along Arab tribal lines goes back as far as the 1920s. According to Martinez, Yinon believed that fractured and divided Arab/Muslim countries could not pose any challenge to Israeli dominance. He insisted,

Every kind of inter-Arab confrontation will assist us in the short run and will shorten the way to the more important aim of breaking up Iraq into denominations as in Syria and in Lebanon.^[8]

Martinez concludes,

Yinon’s geopolitical blueprint is still very relevant today. His vision of a crippled and prostrate Arab/Muslim world is playing out before our very eyes.^[9]

Will Iraq be redrawn into three parts in the near future in fulfillment to Yinon’s suggested strategy? And what about the 5 Israelis arrested for filming and celebrating the destruction of the Twin Towers from New Jersey? Were they agents from the Israeli Secret Service, the Mossad? Did they have beforehand information about the event, as some believe? Were they involved in causing the buildings to implode using explosives on the foundations? Will we ever know the truth?

Notes:

- [1] [Genesis 14:18-20](#) And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the most high God. And he (Melchizedek) blessed him (Abraham), and said, Blessed be Abram of the most high God, possessor of heaven and earth: and blessed be the most high God, which hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand. And he (Abraham) gave him (Melchizedek) tithes of all.
- [2] <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Antisemitism> (accessed 03/2016)
- [3] [Genesis 16:12](#)
- [4] [Genesis 21:18](#)
- [5] [Genesis 25:16](#)
- [6] <http://martinezperspective.wordpress.com/2014/06/25/isis-insurrection-serves-israels-interests/> (accessed 03/2016)
- [7] <http://www.informationclearinghouse.info/pdf/The%20Zionist%20Plan%20for%20the%20Middle%20East.pdf> (accessed 03/2016)
- [8] [Ibid](#)
- [9] <https://martinezperspective.wordpress.com/2014/06/25/isis-insurrection-serves-israels-interests/> (accessed 03/2016)

Chapter 18

Isaac's Prophecy

Another interesting prophecy by one of the patriarchs is Isaac's prophecy over his sons Jacob and Esau. Isaac was Abraham's son. Jacob and Esau were Abraham's grandchildren. Similar to Ishmael and Isaac, the blessing does not go to the older child, Esau, but rather to the younger, Jacob. It's a fascinating story which I do not have time to retell here. But get your **Bible** out and read it in the book of **Genesis**. Isaac ends up giving the blessing to Jacob. Esau comes seeking for a blessing, also. Isaac responds,

Behold I have made him thy Lord, and all his brethren have I given him for servants; and with corn and wine have I sustained him: and what shall I do now unto thee, my son?[\[1\]](#)

But Esau insists,

Hast thou but one blessing, my father? Bless me, even me also, O my father. And Esau lifted up his voice and wept. And Isaac his father answered and said unto him, Behold, thy dwelling shall be the fatness of the earth, and of the dew of heaven above; And by thy sword shall thou live, and shall serve thy brother; and it shall come to pass when thou shall have the dominion, that thou shall break his yoke from off thy neck.[\[2\]](#)

Afterwards, Esau realizes that his wives from the Canaanite women displease his father.

And Esau seeing that the daughters of Canaan pleased not Isaac his father; Then went Esau unto Ishmael, and took unto the wives which he had Mahalath the daughter of

Ishmael Abraham's son, the sister of Nebajoth, to be his wife.[\[3\]](#)

Jacob becomes the father of the twelve tribes of Israel which today we know as the Jewish people. Isaac prophesied “**corn and wine,**” or in other words, wealth. Another part of Isaac’s prophecy said that Jacob’s brother and descendants would be Jacob’s servants. Jacob, therefore, would have power. No one would deny that the descendents of Jacob, the Jewish people, have both wealth and through wealth they have power, as money often equals power.

Esau descendents intermarry with the children of Ishmael and with the children of Canaan and so become part of the Arab peoples. Similar to the prophecy over Ishmael, who

was a wild man and his hand will be against every man, and every man's hand against him,[\[4\]](#)

Esau would live by the sword and yet his brother Jacob would have power over him, because he would serve his brother.

It is interesting how throughout history the Arabs have lived by the sword and have been expert swordsmen. We even see ISIS in Iraq and Syria cutting the throats of foreigners with a knife or small sword! Some **Bible** scholars believe that

the fatness of the earth and of the dew of heaven above

refers to Arab petroleum, which is not something they obtained through hard work but rather as the dew of heaven, they have just been blessed with its richness. Another part of the prophecy says,

And it shall come to pass when thou shall have the dominion, that thou shall break his yoke from off thy neck.[\[5\]](#)

Some believe that sometime in the future the Arabs may break off the yoke of Jewish world control. Some scholars believe that the yoke was broken back in 1973 when the Arabs raised the price of oil and started to amassing huge sums of money through their sales. In any event, the fact that nearly three thousand years ago a rich shepherd in the land of Canaan prophesied the events above is not only very interesting, but surely miraculous.

Notes:

- [1] [Genesis 27:37](#)
- [2] [Genesis 27:38-40](#)
- [3] [Genesis 28:8-9](#)
- [4] [Genesis 16:12](#)
- [5] [Genesis 27:40](#)

Chapter 19

Prophecies of Consequences

In the book of *Joshua* we find Joshua's last words to the children of Israel,

Not one thing has failed of all the good things which the Lord God spoke concerning you; all are come to pass unto you, and not one thing has failed thereof.[\[1\]](#)

Joshua was confirming to the children of Israel how God had fulfilled His promises unto Abraham and Moses, had brought them into the Promised Land and had defeated their enemies. He goes on to say,

Therefore it shall come to pass, that as all the good things are come upon you, which the Lord your God promised you; so shall the Lord bring upon you all evil things, until he have destroyed you from off this good land which the Lord your God has given you. When you have transgressed the covenant of the Lord your God, which he commanded you, and have gone and served other gods, and bowed yourselves to them; then shall the anger of the Lord be kindled against you, and you shall perish quickly from off the good land which he has given unto you.[\[2\]](#)

Israel's time in the Promised Land was short as an independent nation. They soon disobeyed the Lord, were brought into bondage by other nations and finally destroyed and sent into captivity by both the Assyrian and the Babylonian empires, as Joshua and Moses had foretold. The warning prophecy God gave them was fulfilled. Later, the Jews were allowed to return and rebuild the city and the Temple because of the edit decreed by Cyrus, King of Persia around 535 BC, following his conquest of Babylon.

In *Isaiah*, we find a prophecy about Cyrus the King of Persia who would defeat the Babylonian Empire. The prophecy also stated he would give the captive children of Israel permission to return to Jerusalem and rebuild the walls of the city and the Temple. These had been destroyed seventy years earlier by Nebuchadnezzar and his Babylonian army. It is interesting to note that Daniel, who counseled Nebuchadnezzar, continued to be king's counselor under the Medes and Persians who had conquered the Babylonian kingdom. Daniel may have been able to share with both Darius and Cyrus what the Scriptures had predicted.

So this Daniel prospered in the reign of Darius (the Mede), and in the reign of Cyrus the Persian.[\[3\]](#)

Let's look at the prophecy of Isaiah about Cyrus which was received some time after 740 BC.

That says of Cyrus, He is my shepherd, and shall perform all my pleasure: even saying to Jerusalem, Thou shall be built; and to the temple, Thy foundation shall be laid.[\[4\]](#)

The prophecy continues,

For Jacob my servant's sake, and Israel mine elect, I have even called thee by thy name: I have surnamed thee, though thou has not known me.[\[5\]](#) ***I have raised him up in righteousness, and I will direct all his ways: he shall build my city, and he shall let go my captives, not for price nor reward, says the Lord of hosts.***[\[6\]](#)

The above prophecy was fulfilled about 200 years later. In the book of *Ezra* we read that in the first year of Cyrus or in 535 BC, according to historical records, the following took place:

Now in the first year of Cyrus king of Persia, that the word of the Lord by the mouth of Jeremiah might be fulfilled, the Lord stirred up the spirit of Cyrus king of Persia, that

he made a proclamation throughout all his kingdom, and put it also in writing, saying, Thus says Cyrus king of Persia, The Lord God of Heaven has given me all the kingdoms of the earth; and He has charged me to build Him a house at Jerusalem, which is in Judah. Who is there among you of all His people? His God be with him, and let him go up to Jerusalem, which is in Judah, and build the house of the Lord God of Israel, (He is the God) which is in Jerusalem. [\[7\]](#)

The Scripture from *Ezra* mentions a prophecy by Jeremiah. Jeremiah lived some eighty years after Isaiah. Isaiah was prophet from the time of King Uzziah, around 740 BC, through the reign of King Hezekiah. According to Jewish tradition, Isaiah was sawed in half during the reign of Manasseh, around 680 BC. [\[8\]](#)

Jeremiah began prophesying in Judah around 626 BC, or 54 years after Isaiah's death and halfway through the reign of Josiah (640-609 BC), the son of Manasseh. Jeremiah continued prophesying throughout the reigns of Jehoahaz (609), Jehoiakim (609–598), Jehoiachin (598–597) and Zedekiah (597–586). He ended his prophesying sometime after 586 BC, at the time of the fall of Jerusalem to Nebuchadnezzar and the Babylonians, just as he had prophesied by the Word of the Lord.

According to Jewish tradition, Jeremiah was put to death by stoning while living in Egypt. [\[9\]](#) He had been taken captive there by some of the Jewish people after the murder of the Governor appointed by Nebuchadnezzar. Earlier in his career, he had prophesied that the captives of Israel would suffer seventy years in Babylonian captivity before God's mercy allowed them to return to their homeland.

For thus says the Lord, That after seventy years be accomplished at Babylon I will visit you, and perform My good word toward you, in causing you to return to this place (Jerusalem). And I will turn away your captivity, and I will gather you from all the nations, and from all places

whither I have driven you, says the Lord; and I will bring you again into the place whence I caused you to be carried away captive.[\[10\]](#)

These are amazing prophecies which were fulfilled just as God stated them.

Seek ye out of the book of the Lord, and read: no one of these shall fail, none shall want her mate: for My mouth it hath commanded.[\[11\]](#)

Not one prophecy would lack its mate or lack in fulfillment, just as God said.

Notes:

[1] [Joshua 23:14](#)

[2] [Joshua 23:15-16](#)

[3] [Daniel 6:28](#)

[4] [Isaiah 44:28](#)

[5] [Isaiah 45:4](#)

[6] [Isaiah 45:13](#)

[7] [Ezra 1:1-3](#)

[8] <http://www.biblica.com/en-us/bible/online-bible/scholar-notes/niv-study-bible/intro-to-isaiah/> (accessed 03/2016)

[9] <http://www.biblica.com/en-us/bible/online-bible/scholar-notes/niv-study-bible/intro-to-jeremiah/> (accessed 03/2016)

[10] [Jeremiah 29:10-14](#)

[11] [Isaiah 34:16](#)

Section Three: The Evidence and Arguments

Chapter 20

Are You a Prophecy Nut?

Getting back to Bill Salus' sermon, like myself, he believes that:

All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness. [\[1\]](#)

Therefore, as Paul tells us in the book of *Acts*,

For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the council of God. [\[2\]](#)

We, too, should therefore teach the full council of God. Part of the council includes **Bible** prophecy and the fact that the **Bible** says we are living in the Last Days. Most people may not want to hear about the future, especially if it is bad news. But as God's representative, it behooves us to share His Word, including **Bible** prophecy about the End-time events.

According to Bill, **Bible** prophecy is invaluable predictive information outsourced from a loving God with 100% accuracy and is intended to **1**: authenticate His sovereignty, **2**: equip humanity for the days in which they live, and **3**: spare lives and save souls. Bill says you are obsessed with **Bible** prophecy if: **1**: You refuse to cash a US government tax refund for \$666. **2**: Wal-Mart's barcode scanners make you nervous. **3**: You won't put a tracking chip in your pet. **4**: You think the Church Fathers are Hal Lindsey and Tim Lahaye.

Tim Lahaye was co-author of the famous, though scripturally incorrect, "**Left Behind**" series, [\[3\]](#) while Hal Lindsey co-authored

The Late Great Planet Earth which also supported the scripturally weak pre-tribulation doctrine.[4]

Bill's wife laments the fact that her husband is a prophecy freak. She believes that it is the reason they have so few friends. Not everyone wants to talk about **Bible** prophecy most of the time. You might not be obsessed with **Bible** prophecy as such, but it is good to have at least a basic knowledge of some of the different theories concerning End-time events. You might just need it in the future. Knowing **Bible** prophecy can be both comforting and strengthening in times of tribulation. So it behooves all of us to study up on this topic as much as possible. Let's continue our study.

Notes:

[1] [2Timothy 3:16](#)

[2] [Acts 20:27](#)

[3] https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Left_Behind (accessed 03/2016)

[4] https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Late,_Great_Planet_Earth (03/2016)

Chapter 21

Is America in Bible prophecy?

But can we know America's place in *Bible* prophecy? Bill suggests reading the following books: *The Late Great United States* by Mark Hitchcock,[1] *American Apocalypse* by Terry James[2] and *America the Beautiful* by David Reagan.[3] I have not read them personally, but all these authors agree that America is under judgment. Bill says that if America is in prophecy, it is not the same America that we have now. Why is that? Because prophecy seems to indicate that America does not maintain its superpower status forever.

Bill notes that Israel is named over 2,300 times in the Bible, Egypt 565 times, Gaza 30 times, Russia 5, Libya 4 and China once. But where is America, the USA, the strongest military power the world has ever known? Bill gives five possible scripture references that might be referring to America, and then argues for or against their possibility.[4] Let's take a look at one of them: Babylon the Whore of *Revelation 17* and *18*.

Notes:

- [1] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=19Q8WelolsI> (accessed 03/2016)
- [2] <http://www.raptureready.com/terry/newbook2.html> (accessed 03/2016)
- [3] https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=QCwZiXS7_OY (accessed 03/16)
- [4] Bill Salus, <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GKOKqCk5vuo> (03/16)

Chapter 22

Is the Babylon of Revelation America?

Revelation talks about Babylon the Great, "*that great city which reigns over the kings of the earth.*"[\[1\]](#) Some people believe that since New York City is one of the greatest commercial centers of the world, if not the greatest, that perhaps the destruction which takes place in one hour in **Revelation** is talking about her.

Alas, alas that great city Babylon, that mighty city! For in one hour is thy judgment come.[\[2\]](#)

Couldn't that verse have been referring to when the Twin Towers fell on September 11, 2001? I remember receiving various phone calls from different people at the time of the attack on the Twin Towers asking me if it was a fulfillment of the **Revelation** prophecy. Bill notes correctly that although the towers did fall "*in one hour*," the following did not take place.

And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buys their merchandise anymore.[\[3\]](#)

Since world trade did not stop after the attack of September, 2001, Bill Salus dismisses the possibility that the Babylon of **Revelation** could be talking of America. Here's my first disagreement with Bill. Yes, perhaps **Revelation 18** was not talking about 9/11, but perhaps it is talking about some future event which 9/11 was only a foreshadowing of.

If we read carefully **Revelation 17** and **18**, we can find many parallels between Babylon the Great and the USA today. Pastor Mike Taylor from the Church of God organization makes a good case against Babylon neither being the Roman Catholic Church nor Iraq which are often chosen as possible fulfillments of Babylon the Whore. Taylor believes that the good old USA is a

better interpretation.^[4] If you go on-line, you can find others saying the same thing. Let us read from ***Revelation 17*** itself and see how America compares with the imagery presented.

Notes:

[1] [Revelation 17:18](#)

[2] [Revelation 18:10](#)

[3] [Revelation 18:11](#)

[4] <http://www.prophecyupdate.com/can-america-be-mystery-babylon.html>

Chapter 23

Revelation 17 and Commentary

And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will show unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sits upon many waters: With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication. So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet colored beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet color, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication.[\[1\]](#)

After becoming a Christian in 1971, I attended a three-month **Bible** course in Ellenville, upstate New York, which I mentioned in the beginning of this book. At the end of the course, we went on a faith-sharing weekend to Greenwich Village, a popular youth area of New York City at that time. We travelled by bus into New York City. Descending the Catskill Mountains some one hundred miles north of the city, the city loomed before us. It was night and the George Washington Bridge was decked with many brightly-colored lights. The lights also from the many high buildings of the city were awe-inspiring and we gazed with wonder upon this great city. One of our **Bible** teachers started to read from **Revelation 17** and **18**. A musician then followed with a song called *Filthy City Babylon*. At that moment, I felt as if I was traveling into the Bilical Babylon the Great. It was an ominous feeling.

And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS

AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration. And the angel said unto me, Wherefore did thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carries her, which has the seven heads and ten horns. The beast that thou saw was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.[\[2\]](#)

Here we see that the beast has a spiritual element from the dark side as it ascends out of the bottomless pit.

And here is the mind which has wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sits.[\[3\]](#)

Are the seven heads or mountains the seven world empires which have carried this whore throughout the course of history? Some prophecy scholars, trying to fix the Vatican as the seat of the Antichrist, claim that since Rome was built on seven hills, this prophecy is therefore referring to those seven Vatican hills. I recently read an intriguing book about the Vatican titled ***The Jesuits: The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*** by Malachi Martin.[\[4\]](#) The author reveals the sad state of the Catholic Church and how the Jesuits have abandoned their traditional Christian faith for modernism. Fr. Martin has also written other revealing books about the Vatican. At the time of his death, he was working on a new book showing how the Catholic Church had become an instrument of the New World Order. His closest friends believed he was killed for the truths he was exposing.

Though the Catholic Church may very well be controlled by the New World Order masters, it is not the Whore of ***Revelation 17*** and ***18*** at this present time. At the time the book was written

around 90 AD, Rome may very well have seemed like the fulfillment of Babylon the Whore. But as it is today another entity seems to fit the description more accurately. The **Bible** says that the seven heads are seven mountains, and not seven hills. We need to use the **Bible** to interpret itself. Often the symbol of a mountain is used in the **Bible** to represent a kingdom. For example, Mount Zion is often used to refer to God's kingdom or people. Isaiah, when talking about the future millennium reign of God on earth says,

They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain.[\[5\]](#)

In **Daniel**, when Nebuchadnezzar has his End-time dream, he sees a stone strike an enormous image at its feet. The image represents the various world government of man

Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken in pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them: and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth.[\[6\]](#)

So again we see a mountain representing, in this case, the Kingdom of God. Mountains often represent kingdoms, and kingdoms have kings. So the seven heads which are seven mountains should have seven kings and that is exactly what we have in the next verse in **Revelation**:

And there are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he comes, he must continue a short space.[\[7\]](#)

Are these seven kings, the seven kingdoms or empires of world history? The five fallen kings or kingdoms could represent Egypt, Assyria, Babylon, Media-Persia and Greece; the five nations who had been world empires before Rome. Rome was the world empire that "is" at the time **Revelation** was given. The final

One World Government could be the one that “*is not yet come,*” which will exist for only a short time according to this prophecy.

And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seventh, and goes into perdition.[\[8\]](#)

Out of the One World Government, the seventh, will come the Antichrist totalitarian government, the eighth.

And the ten horns which thou saw are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the Beast.[\[9\]](#)

Could these ten horns or kings be ten nations or land areas or free trade regions which collaborate or form the Antichrist world government?

These have one mind, and give their power and strength unto the beast.[\[10\]](#)

“*One mind*” seems to indicate they are a collective or group or a political union of some kind, like the European Union or United Nations.

These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for He is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with Him are called, and chosen, and faithful.[\[11\]](#)

The Lamb represents Jesus. So somehow, the newly-united nations make war with Christianity. Jesus Himself, when talking about the end of the world, predicted a period of Great Tribulation just prior to His return. He said,

When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation spoken by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whosoever reads, let him understand:) For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of

the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days be shortened, there shall no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.[\[12\]](#)

In the *New Testament*, when it is talking about the “*elect*,” it is talking about the Church of believing Christians. It is not referring to the state of Israel, nor the Jewish people, but to believers in Jesus Christ, whether Gentile or Jew.[\[13\]](#)

Christians have been persecuted and killed by atheistic regimes such as Stalin and Mao. The false “Christian” church has also at times persecuted and killed true believing Christians. John Huss and many others protestors were burned at the stake as heretics by the Roman Catholic Church before the Reformation. The Inquisition period afterwards also persecuted believers whose ideas differed with those of the Church. Even in modern times true believing Christians have and are suffering persecution.

It should not surprise us to find that the *Bible* predicts another period of great worldwide persecution against Christian believers. The famous Romanian Christian Richard Wurmbrand, author of [*Tortured for Christ*](#), who suffered years in prison under the communists, has warned the American church that persecution can and will come to Christians in America.[\[14\]](#)

In *Revelation* we read,

And he said unto me, The waters which thou saw, where the whore sits, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.[\[15\]](#)

The waters represent peoples or nations. We see here that the *Bible* will usually interpret itself. So from verse one we see that the whore Babylon sits or rides upon the nations of the earth and sucks their wealth from them and makes them drunk through their intercourse with her. Strangely enough, the term intercourse has had in the past economic significance. In early American documents, it was used when talking about inter-state commerce.

In Portugal the term “fornecedores” is used for salesmen. It has the same root as the word “fornicadores” which means fornicators. The Latin root has to do with “buying and selling” which could apply to products as well as to sex.

And the ten horns which thou saw upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire. [\[16\]](#)

If the Beast is the Antichrist and the whore’s modern fulfillment is the capitalistic, materialistic system epitomized today in the United States, then the Antichrist will destroy America in one hour with the help of the ten nations or political regions that align themselves with him. Let’s read the next verse.

For God has put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled. [\[17\]](#)

Remember God’s judgments are falling on “Babylon” because she has forsaken her Maker. Like Israel of old, Babylon the Whore knew God, but has forsaken Him, for the gods of this world. America, once a great Christian nation, has forsaken her Maker and worshipped materialism and money. She has worshipped wealth, the traditional god of Mammon, and has influenced the rest of the world to do the same.

And the woman which you saw is that great city, which reigns over the kings of the earth. [\[18\]](#)

At the moment, the great city that seems to fit the bill both politically and militarily and financially is none other than New York City and the United States of America. But as every great nation or empire of the past has come to its demise because of moral and spiritual decay from within, it seems that America is headed for the same fate. As Toynbee, the great British historian said, quoting Hegel,

The only thing we learn from history, is that we don't learn from history.^[19]

Notes:

- [1] [Revelation 17:1-4](#)
- [2] [Revelation 17: 5-8](#)
- [3] [Revelation 17:9](#)
- [4] Malachi Martin, *The Jesuits: The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, New York, 1987.
<http://www.amazon.com/The-Jesuits-Malachi-Martin/dp/067165716X>
(accessed 03/2016)
- [5] [Isaiah 11:9](#)
- [6] [Daniel 2:35](#)
- [7] [Revelation 17:10](#)
- [8] [Revelation 17:11](#)
- [9] [Revelation 17:12](#)
- [10] [Revelation 17:13](#)
- [11] [Revelation 17:14](#)
- [12] [Matthew 24:15-22](#)
- [13] <http://www.faithfulwordbaptist.org/elect.html> (accessed 03/2016)
- [14] http://www.sermonindex.net/modules/newbb/viewtopic.php?topic_id=18360&forum=34 (accessed 03/2016)
- [15] [Revelation 17:15](#)
- [16] [Revelation 17:16](#)
- [17] [Revelation 17:17](#)
- [18] [Revelation 17:18](#)
- [19] http://www.goodreads.com/author/quotes/6188.Georg_Wilhelm_Friedrich_Hegel (accessed 03/2016)

Chapter 24

Who is the Great Harlot of Revelation?

In *Revelation* the angel tells John:

The waters which you saw, where the harlot sits, are peoples, multitudes, nations, and tongues. And the ten horns which you saw on the Beast (the Antichrist government), these will hate the harlot, make her desolate and naked, eat her flesh and burn her with fire. For God has put it into their hearts to fulfill His purpose, to be of one mind, and to give their kingdom to the Beast, until the words of God are fulfilled.[\[1\]](#)

The great Harlot therefore rides the peoples and empires of the world as their owner. Who is it that rides or controls or dominates every empire? Every empire has had an ideology or religious element. But besides that, every empire needs financing. One of early Rothschild bankers, Mayer Amschel Rothschild, is quoted as saying,

Give me control of a nation's money supply, and I care not who makes the laws.[\[2\]](#)

Those who control the financial and commercial interests are those who actually control the nation or empire. Benjamin Disraeli, who was twice Prime Minister of Great Britain, wrote in his political novel *Coningsby* in 1844 that,

The world is governed by very different personages from what is imagined by those who are not behind the scenes.[\[3\]](#)

James Perloff, in his well documented book, *The Shadows of Power: the Council on Foreign Relations and the American Decline*, makes a similar point.

On March 26, 1922, Mayor of New York City, John F. Hylan said, “The real menace of our Republic is the invisible government which, like a giant octopus, sprawls its slimy length over our CITY, STATE and NATION. At the head is a small group of banking houses generally referred to as “international bankers.” This little coterie of powerful international bankers virtually run our government for their own selfish ends.”[\[4\]](#)

Some people believe the Capitalistic International Bankers, many of whom have headquarters in New York City, are the real rulers of the world. Sometimes this group is called the Bilderberg Group, sometimes it's called the Illuminati. It consists not only of the financial barons but those who collaborate with them in politics, commerce, media, military, education, science, economics and [medicine](#).

Investigating reporter and author Daniel Estulin has written a thought-provoking book entitled [The True Story of the Bilderberg Group](#). His book goes into much detail of how the international banking families like the Rockefellers and the Rothschilds have created the Bilderberg Group. They use the Trilateral Commission, and the Council of Foreign Relations and many other organizations to control the direction the world is going, towards a one-world government.[\[5\]](#) Other authors' investigatory research has led them to the similar conclusions as Estulin and Perloff, although from a slightly different angles.

In *Murder by Injection: the Story of the Medical Conspiracy Against America*[\[6\]](#), Eustace Mullins goes through the history of medicine in America and how it has gotten into the hands of the super-rich and the pharmaceutical industry. He shows the ties between the super-rich, the medical education system, charities, foundations, banking and the pharmaceutical industry. The same

author gives a controversial history of the Jewish influence in banking and government in his book [*Mullins' New History of the Jews*](#) [7]. Mullins is considered an anti-Semite, but if you can get around his caustic and insulting tone, his book contains some very interesting historical information you may not find elsewhere.

Did you know that Jewish bankers supported Cromwell from Antwerp, Holland in the British civil war? It was their financial backing they enable Cromwell to win the war and behead King James the 1st. Because of their lending “abilities” and the protests of the English aristocrats, King Edward 1 in 1290 had made an edit outlawing Jews from England. But in the 1600s, England was quickly becoming the greatest nation in the world and the bankers wanted back in. After winning the war Cromwell let the Jews return in 1657. He also gave the Dutch William the Orange the Lordship of York. Later, after Cromwell’s death and his son’s disastrous time as leader, James the 2nd regained the English monarchy. But he was soon out and low and behold, William the Orange took his place. He of course was favorable to the Jewish banking authority and in 1694 the “Bank of England” was created giving these foreign Dutch Jewish descendants control over the English currency and ultimately control over the country and its empire.

Mullins also speculates that it was because the Eastern Roman Empire outlawed Jews from political, financial and teaching professions that it lasted a thousand years, while the Western Roman Empire crumbled some five hundred years earlier. According to Mullins, Julius Ceaser was courting Jewish influence which offended his friends and led to his murder on the Ides of March. His friends felt he was betraying the empire with his relationship with the Jewish element.

Des Griffin’s [*Fourth Reich of the Rich*](#) gives an analysis of the present world situation and includes excerpts from the *Protocols of Zion*. [8] Griffin’s also believes a small financial/intellectual elite are leading the world into a One World Government with them at the helm. He writes,

The leaders of the Illuminati, as we have seen, are a small but powerful group which includes international bankers, industrialists, scientists, military and political leaders, educationalists, economists, etc... To say that the whole affair is a “Jewish Conspiracy” is an oversimplification of the facts: it is clearly a Luciferian conspiracy. However, to deny that many Jews have been involved in the Plot would be ridiculous: Weishaupt, Marx, the Warburgs, the Rothschilds, Jacob Schiff, etc, were all Jews.[9]

Although the *Protocols of Zion* have been claimed to be forgeries by Jewish authorizes, they nevertheless describe very accurately a plan for world conquest that many believe is too close to reality to be false. When Henry Ford was asked back in the early 1900s what his opinion of the *Protocols* was he said,

The only statement I care to make about the Protocols is that they fit in with what is going on. They are[at least] sixteen years old, and they have fitted the world situation up to this time. They fit now.[10]

Both Dr. Philip Benzel’s [Alive and Well: One Doctor's Experience with Nutrition in the Treatment of Cancer Patients](#)[\[11\]](#) and G. Edward Griffin’s [World Without Cancer](#)[\[12\]](#) cover the cancer issue and alternative medicine’s difficulty because of persecution by the pharmaceutical industry’s medical monopoly. The experiences they go through support what Mullins has proposed in his controversial book on medicine in America.

[The Nameless War](#)[\[13\]](#) written by Captain Ramsay, who was a member of the British Parliament at the time of its writing, covers the powers behind the scenes which were influential in manipulating the nations of Europe into WWII. Ramsay was making a dossier to present to the then Prime Minister of England Neville Chamberlain verifying the suspicions that a small financial elite were leading England to war against Germany. Just before he was able to give his dossier to Chamberlain, Ramsay

was arrested and imprisoned from 1939 to 1945 and held without trial on accusations of treason.

Ramsay had also been in communication with US Secretary of Defense William Forrestal over his research. A few years later, in 1947, Forrestal lost his life under strange circumstances from a fall from a window at Bethesda Naval Hospital where Truman had sent him to rest at the time of Forrestal's dismissal. The military reported it as a suicide, but many people were convinced it was foul play from the powers that be. Forrestal was reportedly planning on using his fortune to buy an American newspaper and use it to expose the secret powers of the Illuminati to the American people.[14]

Jack Bernstein offers another controversial look from a Jewish writer on some of the points discussed by Mullins and Ramsay. His [*The Life of an American Jew in Racist Marxist Israel*](#)[15] is definitely troublesome, and many believe it led to his sudden death. Here's a quote from his book.

The American people have been led to believe that Jews are "God's Chosen People". This myth was started by a small group of Jews. A few Jewish leaders took excerpts from the Bible and interpreted them as "ChosenPeople." But, isn't it odd that it is not the religious Jews who claim to be "God's Chosen People."... One Israeli religious Jew said it well, "At one time we Jews were chosen by God to be his messengers. But, long ago we forfeited that right". Anyone who has read the Bible with an open mind knows that God gave Jews of that time special favors. But, it was in the form of covenants. In these covenants were conditions — the conditions were that God demanded the Jews obey His Word. Time after time the Jews broke the covenants. They rejected God and turned to adoring mammon. It doesn't take a biblical scholar to realize that long ago even the real Jews lost the right of being God's chosen people.[16]

In *How the World Really Works* by Alan B. Jones,[17] the author critiques books of twelve other writers. It is his hope that young adults will become politically aware to the realities working behind the scenes. His conclusions are a shocking confirmation of what we have touched on so far, including information on the pharmaceutical industry, Medical schools, Foundations, the Federal Reserve, JFK's assassination, wars, the military, drugs and the CIA.

All of the books I have mentioned above show the power of the Internationalists and expose the web they weave to control all aspects of our lives. I am sure you can find more information if you look. But whatever you do, please get informed!

As I have mentioned some writers who have been accused of anti-Semitism, I need to clarify a point. The battle we are in is not a flesh and blood battle for political, economic, or military control. We are not fighting against the Jews, or the bankers, or the communists, or the liberals, or the conservatives, or the radicals, or the rednecks, or the Protestants, or the Catholics, or the Muslims, or the Russians, or any other ethnic, political, military, religious, or ideological group.

Ours is a spiritual battle for the hearts and minds of men's souls for God and His Kingdom of love. We must bring the message of God's love through Jesus to all mankind that all men might be saved and transformed by His loving power. Ours is a war of words to help men find the truth that is in Christ that they may be liberated from false doctrines, the lies and the counterfeits God's enemy has sown through the evil machinations of evil men.

The pen is mightier than the sword. We will wage a war of words to cast down and destroy that which is false, to then build that which is true and righteous. We will oppose falsehood in every shape and form it takes. Our banner is love and truth. We will manifest God's love in the loving deeds He helps us to perform for those in need.

We expect opposition, because evil men from time memorial have opposed the truth. They have slain, maligned, or imprisoned the truth givers. But if God be for us, it matters not who is against us. We fear not those who can kill the body, but we fear Him who is able to cast both body and soul into Hell. That's why I am writing this book, to help you get informed. Let's finish up this chapter.

The quote from *Revelation* at the beginning of this chapter seems to indicate that the Beast, also known as the Antichrist, with his union of nations, the ten horns, will fight against the International Bankers of Babylon the Whore, even though he may come to power with their help. *Revelation* tells us:

And the woman whom you saw is that great city which reigns over the kings of the earth. [18]

Is New York City with its Federal Reserve Bank and other banking and financial institutions reigning over the kings of the earth and therefore that city which the Antichrist wars against?

Notes:

[1] [Revelation 17:15-17](#)

[2] <http://shadowreign.com/topics/financial-empires.html#morequotes> (03/2016)

[3] Benjamin Disraeli, *Coningsby, or the New Generation* (1844), Chapter XV, <http://en.wikiquote.org> (accessed 03/2016)

[4] James Perloff, *The Shadows of Power: the Council on Foreign Relations and the American Decline*, pg.3.

http://www.pdfarchive.info/pdf/P/Pe/Perloff_James_-_The_shadows_of_power.pdf (accessed 03/2016)

http://www.thirdworldtraveler.com/New_World_Order/Part1_Shadows_Power.html (accessed 03/2016)

[5] Daniel Estulin, *The True Story of the Bilderberg Group*, TrineDay LLC, Oregon. https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=5_QCQ3ZzGfw (accessed 03/2016)

[6] Eustace Mullins, *Murder by Injection: The Story of the Medical Conspiracy Against America*, 1988.

- <http://www.verontrustemoeders.nl/Murder%20by%20Injection.pdf>
(03/2016)
- [7] Eustace Mullins, *[Mullins' New History of the Jews](#)*, 1968.
https://archive.org/stream/MullinsNewHistoryOfTheJews1968/MULLINS_Eustace-Mullins_New_History_Of_The_Jews-1968_djvu.txt
<https://archive.org/stream/MullinsNewHistoryOfTheJews>
(03/2016)
- [8] Des Griffin, *[Fourth Reich of the Rich](#)*, Emissary Publications, 1976.
http://www.thirdworldtraveler.com/Ruling_Elites/Fourth_Reich_Rich.html
(03/2016)
- [9] Ibid, pgs. 206,208.
- [10] Ibid, pg. 209.
- [11] Dr. Philip Binzel, *[Alive and Well](#)*: One Doctor's Experience with Nutrition in the Treatment of Cancer Patients.
<http://www.whale.to/m/binzel.html> (03/16)
- [12] G. Edward Griffin, *[World Without Cancer](#)*: The Story of Vitamin B17.
https://ia800500.us.archive.org/13/items/World_Without_Cancer/World_Without_Cancer.pdf (accessed 03/2016)
- [13] Captain Archibald Ramsay, *[The Nameless War](#)*, Britons Publishing Company, London, 1952.
<http://www.sweetliberty.org/issues/wars/nameless/intro.shtml> (accessed 03/2016)
- [14] <http://www.abovetopsecret.com/forum/thread432033/pg1> (03/2016)
- [15] Jack Bernstein, *[The Life of an American Jew in Racist Marxist Israel](#)*, 1985. <http://www.biblebelievers.org.au/israel.htm> (accessed 03/2016)
- [16] Ibid, under section called "God's Chosen People."
- [17] Jones, Alan B., *[How America Really Works](#)*, 1996.
http://www.goodreads.com/book/show/847590.How_the_World_Really_Works
http://www.thirdworldtraveler.com/New_World_Order/HowWorldReallyWorks.html (accessed 03/2016)
- [18] [Revelation 17:18](#)

Chapter 25

The Boogie Banker Man Will Get You If You Don't Watch Out!

Other United States Presidents have warned about the Bankers. Once they are given the right to control the money supply and issue money and credit for the government, they gain a stranglehold on government. Thomas Jefferson, the third President of the United States, made the following statement in the debate over the re-charter of the Bank Bill of 1809.

I believe that banking institutions are more dangerous to our liberties than standing armies. If the American people ever allow private banks to control the issue of their currency, first by inflation, then by deflation, the banks...will deprive the people of all property until their children wake-up homeless on the continent their fathers conquered.... The issuing power should be taken from the banks and restored to the people, to whom it properly belongs.[\[1\]](#)

He later said,

The modern theory of the perpetuation of debt has drenched the earth with blood, and crushed its inhabitants under burdens ever- accumulating.[\[2\]](#)

James Madison, the fourth President, said,

History records that the money-changers have used every form of abuse, intrigue, deceit, and violent means possible to maintain their control over governments by controlling money and its issuance.[\[3\]](#)

Andrew Jackson, the seventh President, had a continual battle trying to keep America free from the International Bankers' Central Banking system. He said,

If Congress has the right under the Constitution to issue paper money, it was given to be used by themselves, not to be delegated to individuals or corporations.[\[4\]](#)

The Central Banks are nothing more than private corporations made for the benefit of a few wealthy individuals. Their special relationship with government gives them immense power and credibility. The common people end up believing they are owned and controlled by the government. But the truth is they own and control the government.

Abraham Lincoln, the sixteenth President of the USA, because of his problems with financing the Civil War, fought for the government to regain control of creating money. Many believe he was killed for his stance against the Central Bankers of America whom he had withstood when he issued his famous Lincoln Greenbacks to pay the Union troops. He said,

The Government should create, issue, and circulate all the currency and credits needed to satisfy the spending power of the Government and the buying power of consumers. By the adoption of these principles, the taxpayers will be saved immense sums of interest. Money will cease to be master and become the servant of humanity.[\[5\]](#)

Just prior to his assassination, Lincoln stated:

I see in the near future a crisis approaching that unnerves me, and causes me to tremble for the safety of our country. Corporations have been enthroned, an era of corruption in high places will follow, and the money power of the country will endeavor to prolong its reign by working upon the prejudices of the people, until wealth is aggregated in a few hands and the Republic is destroyed.[\[6\]](#)

Reflecting on Lincoln's death, Otto von Bismarck (1815-1898) Chancellor of Germany remarked,

The death of Lincoln was a disaster for Christendom. There was no man in the United States great enough to wear his boots and the bankers went anew to grab the riches. I fear that foreign bankers with their craftiness and tortuous tricks will entirely control the exuberant riches of America and use it to systematically corrupt civilization.[\[7\]](#)

Some believe that the death of John F. Kennedy, Robert Kennedy and the Ted Kennedy "accident on the bridge" were the result of the Kennedys confronting the hidden powers behind the scenes. James Perloff[\[8\]](#), who I quoted earlier, notes the following:

Some have even speculated that his (JFK's) assassination, still clothed in mystery, may have resulted from an attempt to break with the Establishment. Though it may have no significance, both McCloy and Allen Dulles, the chairman and former president of the Council on Foreign Relations, served on the Warren Commission investigating the President's death.[\[9\]](#)

Allen Dulles took control of the Commission. As you may remember, he had been fired by President Kennedy as head of the CIA because of the Bay of Pigs fiasco where the CIA tried to push the President into using American planes to give coverage to an invasion of Cuba by so-called Cuban freedom fighters. Even though fired, Dulles was still very much in control of the organization through his former loyal under-studies and was the most powerful figure on the Warren Commission committee.

You can read about the events further in Peter Janney's book [*Mary's Mosaic*](#),[\[10\]](#) on the relationship of Mary Pinchot with President Kennedy and her unsolved murder.[\[11\]](#) The ***Final Judgment*** by Michel Collis Piper[\[12\]](#) gives even more insight into JFK's sad death. Kennedy was against Israel developing their

own atomic bomb and was using all his power to stop Israel from gaining a nuclear possibility. The resulting strained relations may have had even deeper consequences. The ‘accident’ in Germany after the World War II that killed General George Patton[13], the ‘suicide’ of Secretary of Defense Forrestal[14] a few years later, and the humiliation of General Douglas MacArthur, were no doubt handled by the same powers from behind the scenes. Those powers feared these good men would disrupt their plans for world domination.

Please take time to read Perloff’s or some of the other authors’ books or find them on YouTube. Peter Seeger’s old song [***Banks of Marble***](#) [15] also catches the simple truth we have been talking about, and all know, but seem unable to act upon. In Seeger’s song, he compares the working man’s poverty to the rich banks which gained their wealth through the sweat of the working man’s brow. The farmer, the seaman and the miner all suffer during economic down-spins arranged by the banks. Sadly, the working man loses his hard-earned livelihood to the marble edifices!

Notes:

[1] <http://www.foundingfatherquotes.com/father/id/6>

[2] <http://www.themoneymasters.com/the-money-masters/famous-quotations-on-banking/>

[3] [*Ibid*](#)

[4] [*Ibid*](#)

[5] [*Ibid*](#)

[6] [*Ibid*](#)

[7] [*Ibid*](#)

[8] https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=j_gj1uZ6194

[9] James Perloff, *Shadows of Power*, Western Islands Publishers, Appleton, Wisconsin, 1988, p.114.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wHa1r4nIaug> (03/16)

[10] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=EYi9R7534wE> (accessed 03/2016)

[11] Peter Janney, *Mary’s Mosaic: The CIA Conspiracy to Murder John F. Kennedy, Mary Pinchot Meyer, and Their Vision for World Peace*, Skyhorse Publishing, 2013.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VKC4jTftxvY> (03/16)

- [12] Michel Collins Piper, *Final Judgment*, Wolfe Press, Washington, DC, 1995.
- [12] <http://www.mujahidkamran.com/articles.php?id=33> (accessed 03/2016)
- [14] <http://www.criminalelement.com/blogs/2013/08/secretary-of-defense-james-forrestal-murder-or-suicide-tony-hays> (accessed 03/2016)
- <http://www.dcdave.com/article4/021110.html> (accessed 03/2016)
- [15] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=x-o3CJytIPE> (accessed 03/2016)

Chapter 26

The World, Brother, the World! – Money, Money, Money Makes the World Go Round!

The money-changers do not just want to control America, but the world. Former USA President Bill Clinton's mentor was Professor Carroll Quigley from Georgetown University. In his book *Tragedy and Hope*, Quigley revealed the following plan of the Bilderberg Group:

The powers of financial capitalism had another far-reaching aim, nothing less than to create a world system of financial control in private hands able to dominate the political system of each country and the economy of the world as a whole. This system was to be controlled in a feudalist fashion by the central banks of the world acting in concert, by secret agreements arrived at in frequent meetings and conferences. The apex of the systems was to be the Bank for International Settlements in Basel, Switzerland; a private bank owned and controlled by the world's central banks which were themselves private corporations. Each central bank...sought to dominate its government by its ability to control Treasury loans, to manipulate foreign exchanges, to influence the level of economic activity in the country, and to influence cooperative politicians by subsequent economic rewards in the business world.[\[1\]](#)

These boys are playing some pretty serious hard-ball with their own agenda and personal interests. The ultimate goal is none other than a One World Government. They want the whole world in their hands and they are moving in that direction! David Rockefeller in his autobiography confessed,

Some even believe we [the Rockefeller family] are part of a secret cabal working against the best interests of the United States, characterizing my family and me as 'internationalists' and of conspiring with others around the world to build a more integrated global political and economic structure - One World, if you will. If that's the charge, I stand guilty, and I am proud of it. [2]

Back in 1991, speaking to the Trilateral Commission Rockefeller said,

We are grateful to The Washington Post, The New York Times, Time Magazine and other great publications whose directors have attended our meetings and respected their promises of discretion for almost forty years. It would have been impossible for us to develop our plan for the world if we had been subject to the bright lights of publicity during those years. But, the work is now much more sophisticated and prepared to march towards a World Government. The supranational sovereignty of an intellectual elite and world bankers is surely preferable to the national auto-determination practiced in past centuries. [3]

In an interview before his death, former movie producer and political activist Aaron Russo said that he had been invited to be part of the elite group by Nick Rockefeller. Rockefeller told him,

The end goal is to get everybody chipped, to control the whole society, to have the bankers and the elite people control the world. [4]

In *Revelation* when talking about Babylon the Great we read,

For thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived. [5]

Could those merchants be the very International Bankers with their Bilderberg Group who have deceived the nations into

accepting their central Banking system and with it the worship of material things? Are they the sorcerers deceiving the nations? Surely, they must be part of them.

Woodrow Wilson on his retirement from politics admitted his mistake of yielding to the Bankers' wishes. Despite warnings from earlier United States Presidents, Wilson signed the 1913 Federal Reserve Act which created the Federal Reserve Central Banking system. The same year he published a book called *The New Freedom*, in which he said the following:

Some of the biggest men in the United States, in the field of commerce and manufacture, are afraid of somebody, are afraid of something. They know there is a power somewhere so organized, so subtle, so complete, so pervasive, that they had better not speak above their breath when they speak in condemnation of it.[\[6\]](#)

A few years later Wilson lamented,

A great industrial nation is controlled by its system of credit. Our system of credit is concentrated. The growth of the nation, therefore, and all our activities are in the hands of a few men... We have come to be one of the worst ruled, one of the most completely controlled and dominated Governments in the civilized world, no longer a Government by free opinion, no longer a Government by conviction and the vote of the majority, but a Government by the opinion and duress of a small group of dominant men.[\[7\]](#)

When asked his opinion about the American Central Banking System, Henry Ford, the founder of Ford Motor Company, was paraphrased as having said the following:

It is well enough that people of the nation do not understand our banking and money system, for if they did,

I believe there would be a revolution before tomorrow morning.[\[8\]](#)

In 1924, while addressing stockholders, the Chairman of the powerful Midland Bank in England, Reginald McKenna was quoted as saying,

I am afraid the ordinary citizen will not like to be told that the banks can and do create money. And they who control the credit of the nation direct the policy of Governments and hold in the hollow of their hand the destiny of the people.[\[9\]](#)

In 1815, Napoleon Bonaparte, Emperor of France, also commented on the banking situation,

When a government is dependent upon bankers for money, they and not the leaders of the government control the situation, since the hand that gives is above the hand that takes... Money has no motherland; financiers are without patriotism and without decency; their sole object is gain.[\[10\]](#)

Some sort of capitalism is now present in almost every country in the world. Most countries have a Central Banking System that cooperates with the International Banks. You may have noticed how a Central Banker may end up as a Secretary of Finance or Secretary of the Treasurer in a country's government. He may come in during a moment of crisis and then afterward return back to the Banking System. A close link exists between government and the Central Banks. The reason is that the governments are dependent on the loans they get from those very banks.

Internationally, the countries that refuse to cooperate with the Central Banking System or act independently get pressured financially like Venezuela and Cuba and Iran, or even militarily like Saddam Hussein's Iraq and Gaddafi's Libya and Assad's Syria. It is not news how the American Central Intelligence

Agency has used covert activities such as financial crisis, political scandals, sicknesses and even assassinations in Latin American and other countries around the world to forge its political agenda, not to mention the hidden illegal drug trafficking they used to finance their subversive activities. *The Politics of Heroin* by Professor John McCloy[11] and *Dope, Inc.* by the Executive Intelligence Review[12] cover this sad aspect of our society.

John Perkins' bestselling book, *The Confessions of an Economic Hitman*,[\[13\]](#) explains how foreign policy is achieved. It may not be as you expected. According to Perkins, the World Bank and IMF loans are used to generate profits for U.S. business. Poor countries are left with huge debts that allow the United States to control them. As a financial consultant for the banks and instrumental in helping get the loans accepted, Perkins would over-estimate the profit a new investment would bring into a country's treasury, while under estimating the expense of building the new infrastructure needed for the new industry.

For example, maybe the goal is to build a dam in a poor country in order to then make an electricity company. The new company would provide electricity for much of the country and therefore help bring them out of poverty. Seems like a benevolent scheme. But by accepting the proposal for the investment, the country would wind up in debt and not able to pay the loan back. In the end, they would have to sell off the newly made industry to foreign bankers for cash to pay back the loan, or sell off some other prized national resource such as a forest or a copper mine etc. Those politicians who could see through the scam and refused to cooperate would end up having political problems, health problems, scandals or even die "accidentally" in a car or airplane crash. Others who cooperated managed to siphon off enough money into their own pockets and leave an even bigger burden on their country to pay back. We would call them corrupt Third World politicians. But who really are the corrupters?

It is not surprising that two former Secretaries of Defence, Robert McNamara and Paul Wolfowitz, went on to head the

World Bank. The nations' debt to international banks ensures they are controlled by the United States, which pressures them into joining the "coalition of the willing" that helped invade Iraq or allowing U.S. military bases on their land. If countries refuse to "honor" their debts, the CIA or Department of Defense enforces U.S. political will through coups or military action.[\[14\]](#)

In *War is a Racket*, written between the two World Wars by the most decorated Marine in history at that time, Brigadier General Smedley Butler, we find his apology for being a military Mafioso for Wall Street and Big Business and the bankers. He confesses.

I spent 33 years and four months in active military service and during that period I spent most of my time as a high-class muscle man for Big Business, for Wall Street and the bankers. In short, I was a racketeer, a gangster for capitalism. I helped make Mexico and especially Tampico safe for American oil interests in 1914. I helped make Haiti and Cuba a decent place for the National City Bank boys to collect revenues in. I helped in the raping of half a dozen Central American republics for the benefit of Wall Street. I helped purify Nicaragua for the International Banking House of Brown Brothers in 1902-1912. I brought light to the Dominican Republic for the American sugar interests in 1916. I helped make Honduras right for the American fruit companies in 1903. In China in 1927 I helped see to it that Standard Oil went on its way unmolested. Looking back on it, I might have given Al Capone a few hints. The best he could do was to operate his racket in three districts. I operated on three continents.[\[15\]](#)

We have already talked about [Mullins' New History of the Jews](#),[\[16\]](#) which touches on the topic of the International Bankers and the Jewish element and how earlier civilizations tried to control their influence. Also, in [The Nameless War](#), we have seen how Captain AHM Ramsay[\[17\]](#), a member of the British

Parliament before WWII, accused the International Bankers of being behind revolutions and wars in Europe, manipulating events for their own political and financial aims. In the same vein, ***How the World Really Works***, [18] by Alan B. Jones, also mentioned earlier, reveals with shocking insight the plans of the Internationalists in their goals for world domination. What is amazing to me is that the revelations of these authors go hand and hand with what the ***Bible*** says will happen in the “last days.” Are we moving towards the forming of a One World Government that will dominate and oppress the nations of the world?

Notes:

- [1] <http://www.namebase.org/news01.html> (accessed 03/2016)
- [2] David Rockefeller, *Memoirs*, Random House Trade Paperbacks, 2003, p.405.
- [3] <http://opengov.ideascale.com/a/dtd/David-Rockefeller-s-book-Memoirs-admits-secretly-conspiring-for-a-NWO/4007-4049> (accessed 06/16)
- [4] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=h9Wsb4qBckU> (accessed 06/16)
- [5] [Revelation 18:23](#)
- [6] Woodrow Wilson, *The New Freedom*.
<http://www.goodreads.com/quotes/199916-some-of-the-biggest-men-in-the-united-states-in> <http://www.goodreads.com/quotes/199916-some-of-the-biggest-men-in-the-united-states-in> (accessed 03/2016)
- [7] https://en.wikiquote.org/wiki/Talk:Woodrow_Wilson (accessed 03/2016)
- [8] <http://skeptics.stackexchange.com/questions/18247/did-henry-ford-predict-revolution-if-people-understood-the-banking-and-monetary> (accessed 03/2016)
- [9] http://www.moneyreformparty.org.uk/money/about_money/quotes.php (03/16)
- [10] *Ibid* (accessed 03/2016)
- [11] <http://www.amazon.com/Politics-Heroin-Complicity-Global-Trade/dp/1556524838> (accessed 06/2016)
- [12] <http://www.amazon.com/Dope-Inc-Britains-Opium-Against/dp/1615772847> (accessed 06/2016)
- [13] <http://www.amazon.com/Confessions-Economic-Hit-John-Perkins/dp/0452287081> (accessed 03/2016)
- [14] <http://www.zerohedge.com/contributed/2014-04-18/bankers-are-behind-warsLink> (accessed 03/2016)

- [15] Smedly Butler, *War is a Racket*,
<http://www.informationclearinghouse.info/article4377.htm> (accessed 03/2016)
- [16] Eustace Mullins, *Mullins' New History of the Jews*, The International Institute for Jewish Studies, Staunton, Virginia, 1968.
https://archive.org/stream/MullinsNewHistoryOfTheJews1968/MULLINS_Eustace-Mullins_New_History_Of_The_Jews-1968_djvu.txt (accessed 03/2016)
- [17] Captain AHM Ramsay, *The Nameless War*. Britons Publishing Company, London, 1952
<http://www.sweetliberty.org/issues/wars/nameless/intro.shtml> (accessed 03/2016)
- [18] Jones, Alan B., *How the World Really Works*, ABJ Press, 1996.
http://www.thirdworldtraveler.com/New_World_Order/HowWorldReallyWorks.html (accessed 03/2016)

Chapter 27

The American Dream of Easy Living

From all that I have presented in the previous chapters, I think it is not illogical to conclude that New York City could be the present day manifestation of Babylon the Great. *Revelation* says,

For all the nations have drunk of the wine of her wrath of her fornication, the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth have become rich through the abundance of her luxury.[\[1\]](#)

America has been the choice market place for the world for the last half of the 20th century. It is the epitome of opulence. The Apostle John warned,

Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passes away, and the lust thereof: but he that does the will of God abides forever.[\[2\]](#)

The world has been lusting after the American Dream of being rich and having an easy life full of material things, sex and money. But it's a false illusion promoted by her media magicians, so that the kings and the inhabitants of the earth fornicate with her both spiritually and materially. The American Dream is an imagination or Image-Nation, a false imaginary image fed to the nations of the world by the American media: the television, film and the music industries.

The nations of the world have bought her merchandise. But more importantly they have bought into the false idea that money,

material things, wealth, sex, and the “good life” bring happiness. The nations follow the American Dream and live a life in mad pursuit of material things which never satisfy and only leave us empty and frustrated thinking, “Is this all there is to life?”

After many years of riotous living or living high on the hog or consuming more of her share of the world’s pie of natural resources than everyone else, America has accumulated a trade deficit with many countries. She’s like an old whore who no longer satisfies her customers. Her money pimps are losing their confidence in her value and may one day soon dump her completely to try to save their own investments. The American government has a deficit of some 18 trillion dollars to its Central Bankers. Those bankers in turn “sell” that debt to foreign investors like Saudi Arabia, China, Russia, who invest their reserves dollars back into the American banking system to help keep the world-wide financial system afloat.

As long as they have confidence that America is a good investment everything is okay. But that confidence is waning. Besides that, the American consumers have a similar massive debt to their banks. If a group of international countries, who possess large amounts of US dollars in their reserves, would dump their dollars, the whole financial banking system could tumble down in one day, the great financial crash prophesied by many important investment analyzers.

Read *The New York Times* bestseller book, ***The Death of Money: The Coming Collapse of the International Monetary System***, by James Rickards.[3] Rickards gives a pretty good analysis of the current state of the world financial system. He says,

The coming collapse of the dollar and the international monetary system is entirely foreseeable. This is not a provocative conclusion.[4]

Many comment on how China and the Arab countries are buying up America's charmed real-estate.

Can we deny that America is the only nation today that seems to most perfectly fit the image presented in ***Revelation*** of Babylon the Great, the Mother of Harlots? Could her daughters be the other great cities of the world that copy her and in turn promote her worship of materialism, sex, money and the things that money can buy? Like God said to decadent Judah through Jeremiah,

for according to the number of thy cities are thy gods, O Juda,[\[5\]](#)

or through Isaiah where the Lord said,

Prepare slaughter for his children for the iniquity of their fathers; that they do not rise, nor possess the land, nor fill the face of the world with cities.[\[6\]](#)

Is Western capitalism with its worship of material things as the ultimate goal of life, the Whore of Babylon, a false religion that has deceived the whole world and of which Karl Marx predicted would ultimately destroy itself? I am going to include ***Revelation 18*** at this point to make sure you read it in its completeness and have a feeling for its message.

Notes:

[1] [Revelation 18:3](#)

[2] [1John 2:15-17](#)

[3] Rickards, James; ***The Death of Money: The Coming Collapse of the International Monetary System***; Penguin group; New York; 2014.

<http://www.amazon.com/The-Death-Money-Collapse-International/dp/1591846706> (accessed 03/2016)

[4] Ibid

[5] [Jeremiah 2:28](#)

[6] [Isaiah 14:21](#)

Chapter 28

Revelation Chapter 18

By Jesus Christ and the Apostle John

And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory. And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.[\[1\]](#)

And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities. Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled fill to her double. How much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she says in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow. Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judges her.[\[2\]](#)

And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning, Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas that great city Babylon, that mighty city! for in one hour is thy judgment come. And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buys their merchandise any more: The merchandise of

gold, and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all thymine wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and marble, And cinnamon, and odors, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men. And the fruits that thy soul lusted after are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly are departed from thee, and thou shalt find them no more at all.[\[3\]](#)

The merchants of these things, which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing, And saying, Alas, alas that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls! For in one hour so great riches is come to naught. And every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off, And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What city is like unto this great city! And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness! for in one hour is she made desolate.[\[4\]](#)

Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets; for God hath avenged you on her. And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all. And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee; and no crafts-man, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more in thee; and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee; And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived. And in her was found the

blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.[\[5\]](#)

Notes:

- [1] [Revelation 18:1-3](#)
- [2] [Revelation 18:4-8](#)
- [3] [Revelation 18:9-14](#)
- [4] [Revelation 18:15-19](#)
- [5] [Revelation 18:20-24](#)

Chapter 29

Music is the Message – The Sirens of Babylon!

Another aspect of Babylon the Whore in the book of *Revelation* is her music ministry. In one of the last verses in chapter eighteen which depicts the destruction of Babylon, we see what could be interpreted as the destruction of the music and entertainment industry.

And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee. [\[1\]](#)

In the same chapter we also have read that Babylon was

the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit. [\[2\]](#)

Jesus has shown us that words are actually spiritual in nature and therefore spiritual forces. He said,

The words I speak unto you they are spirit and they are life. [\[3\]](#)

Words are real things. They bless or they curse. They lift up or they pull down.

Death and life are in the power of the tongue, [\[4\]](#) *for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks.* [\[5\]](#)

The Apostle James even wrote a whole chapter about the tongue. The subject of the tongue is worth our while reviewing because it is a very important part of a successful life. Here it is for you to meditate on.

My brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater condemnation. For in many things we

offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body.

Behold, we put bits in the horses' mouths, that they may obey us; and we turn about their whole body. Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whithersoever the governor lists. Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasts great things.

Behold, how great a matter a little fire kindles! And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it defiles the whole body, and sets on fire the course of nature; and it is set on fire of hell.

For every kind of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and of things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of mankind: But the tongue can no man tame; it is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison.

Therewith bless we God, even the Father; and therewith curse we men, which after the similitude of God. Out of the same mouth proceeds blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not so to be. Doth a fountain send forth at the same place sweet water and bitter? Can the fig tree, my brethren, bear olive berries? either a vine, figs? so can no fountain both yield salt water and fresh.

Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? let him show out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom. But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth. This wisdom descends not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish. For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work.

But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then

peaceable, gentle, and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy. And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace.[\[6\]](#)

Are we bringing peace to the world with our words, or strife and division? Jesus said,

But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.[\[7\]](#)

Jesus also said,

The word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.[\[8\]](#)

In other words, if we have heard God's Word and rejected it, we will be accountable for its truth whether we choose to believe it or not. Like the Apostle James has said,

To him that knows to do good and does it not, to him it is sin.[\[9\]](#)

In another discourse Jesus said,

Not which goes into the mouth defiles a man; but that which comes out of the mouth, this defiles a man. Do not you understand that whatsoever enters into the mouth goes into the belly, and is cast out into the draught? But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man. For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, and blasphemies: these are the things which defile a man.[\[10\]](#)

That which goes into a man is not what condemns him, but that which comes out of a man. Could the music industry, with its capital in America and its often open rebellion against God and traditional American values and morals, be a foul spirit? Could the music industry actually be a spiritual demonic force, especially in its perverse lyrics promoting suicide, sexual promiscuity, violence, selfishness and Satanist Aleister Crowley's "***Do all that you will***" philosophy? Nike has popularized his phrase in the popular '***Just Do It***' slogan. Yes, '***Just Do It***,' as long as it's within the dictates of loving God and loving your neighbor as yourself. That's fine. Otherwise, ***Just Don't Do It!*** Could the music and television and movie industry be polluting the world with the words they pour out against God and all that is called godly?

In the past America has produced a lot of good movies and a lot of good music, like the protest music of the 60s and 70s. Let's take a look at some of the songs from the Vietnam War period and afterwards.

Bryan McGuire sang one of my favorites called [*Eve of Destruction*](#). [11] P. F. Sloan, who wrote the song, gave various metaphors showing that it certainly seemed like the world was headed for destruction. I am sorry I cannot include the lyrics here. Because of copyright laws you will have to check them out on the Internet if you are not familiar with them. Even today when we watch the evening news, it certainly seems like the world is on the eve of destruction. The Sloan/McGuire song reminds me of the words from Apostle Paul,

This know also, that in the Last Days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, traitors, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God, having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn

away....Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.... But evil men shall wax worse and worse deceiving and being deceive.[\[12\]](#)

In an earlier song by Peter Seeger and L. Hays from the '60s called *If I Had a Hammer*,[\[13\]](#) the authors sang a song of godly warning of the danger approaching our land because of the lack of love between people, the lack of justice and true freedom. The song brings to my mind the words of Moses who said,

Thou shalt not wrest judgment; thou shalt not respect persons, neither take a gift: for a gift doth blind the eyes of the wise, and pervert the words of the righteous. That which is altogether just shall thou follow, that thou may live, and inherit the land which the Lord thy God gives thee.[\[14\]](#)

The Lord through Jeremiah said something similar many years later.

Thus says the Lord; Execute ye judgment and righteousness, and deliver the spoiled out of the hand of the oppressor: and do no wrong, do no violence to the stranger, the fatherless, nor the widow, neither shed innocent blood in this place.[\[15\]](#)

Seeger and Hays are calling out for someone to hammer out righteous judgment against the evil which we see so prevalent in the world today. I think it is a universal sentiment within us which yearns for true justice and liberty for all mankind. It is certainly what we find in the writings of Moses and Jeremiah and the other prophets in both the *Old* and *New Testaments*.

In the song [People Got to Be Free](#),[\[16\]](#) with words by Felix Cavaliere and music by Edward Brigati Jr., we find a simple melody reminding us that people everywhere just want to be free. They don't want big business. They don't want big government. They don't want big wars. They just really want to live in peace

and harmony. Sad to say, because of man's sinful nature, and the lust and greed of evil men, those days of peace and harmony will not be reached until God Himself enters once again into His own creation during the 1000-year reign of Christ on earth. But even that wonderful Millennium period will end in war and destruction until God forms a new heaven and new earth where,

God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain; for the former things are passed away.[\[17\]](#)

Finally, there will be peace on earth and goodwill towards men. In Bob Dylan's [Blowing in the Wind](#),[\[18\]](#) he contemplates in sadness how man seems incapable of learning from the past. Like Arnold Toynbee the famous historian said, quoting from Hegel,

The only thing we learn from history is that we do not learn from history.[\[19\]](#)

Or as George Santayana said,

Those who ignore the lessons of history are condemned to repeat them.[\[20\]](#)

I remember singing Dylan's song as I sat contemplating my own life and the decision I, as a young adult, had to make concerning the war in Vietnam. Besides the words of Jesus, it was the songs of that era which gave me faith to resist the draft and refuse to become part of America's war machine against the poor nations of the world. Country Joe and the Fish had a great song in *1-2-3 What Are We Fighting For?*[\[21\]](#) And there were many others. As Solomon wrote,

Sorrow is better than laughter: for by the sadness of the countenance the heart is made better. The heart of the wise is in the house of mourning; but the heart of fools is in the house of mirth.[\[22\]](#)

I had gotten a very low lottery draft number and was surely headed for the war after my college deferment ended. Nevertheless, the sorrow of heart that I experienced during my college years, wondering what I should do, caused me to seek desperately for answers to life's big questions. That sorrow caused me to search for truth and in the end I found God.

In the song [*He Ain't Heavy, He's My Brother*](#),^[23] written by B. Scott and B. Russell and sung by the Hollies, we could hear the heart cry of youth of those years who rejected the dog-eat-dog values of modern society and yearned to live in brotherly love. As Jesus said,

No greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.^[24]

And Apostle John so aptly put,

For this is the message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another. Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous. Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you.

We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren. He that loves not his brother abides in death. Whosoever hates his brother is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him.

Hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren. But whoso hath this world's good, and sees his brother have need, and shuts up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwells the love of God in him? My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth.^[25]

Scott and Russell's song reminds me of the old Indian story from the Himalayan Mountains. It's a true story from the life of Sadhu Sundar Singh.[26] Two men were travelling in the mountains when a terrible storm broke out. With much difficulty they struggle on in hope of finding shelter and safety in the next mountain village. As they travel, they come upon the body of a man dying from cold, unable to go forward. The men debate on whether they should stop and help this wearied stranger who was as good as dead already. But they are not able to come to an agreement. Finally one walks off in disgust, claiming they could barely save their own lives, let alone help some other poor chap nearly dead anyway.

The other traveler, however, feels the conviction of heart to stop and help that weakened soul. In great effort he manages to lift the nearly-frozen man to his shoulders and more slowly than before struggles forward. Soon, the extra effort and friction of the frozen man's body against his own causes his own body to warm up. The weary traveler's body also begins to revive from the same heat. Shortly, they come across the frozen body of the man who had refused to help. He had walked off in defiance to save his own life, only to die alone without the help of others. In the end, the dying man wasn't so heavy after all, but was the salvation of the man who took compassion upon him. It's a good lesson for us all, and similar to the message of Scott and Russell's song *He Ain't Heavy, He's My Brother*.

Simon and Garfunkel's song *Bridge Over Troubled Waters*[27] is another one of those nearly prophetic songs of that bye-gone era. I once saw the song performed by a Kenyan National Dance group, while on a humanitarian trip to Mozambique.

We had been invited to the National Dance Theater in downtown Maputo to watch Mozambique's National Dance Troupe perform a dance rendering the country's defeat of the Portuguese imperialistic power. It was a war dirge if ever I saw one honoring the National Police among whom we sat. However, after an un-entertaining hour of Africans dancing to war rhythms,

we were pleasantly surprised by the beautiful rendition of *Bridge Over Troubled Waters*, by the visiting Kenyan dancers.

The two renditions were like night and day. One was of war, while the other was of love and compassion. The words of Simon and Garfunkel's song seemed as if God was speaking, His Holy Spirit calling down comforting words of assurance. God would Himself be the bridge over troubled waters and as Jesus had laid down His life, so His Holy Spirit would be with us to help us in our moments of trial and difficulty and encourage us to be bridges over troubled waters for one another.

Even a Coke-a-Cola commercial in the early 1970's gave a message of peace and love. The song [*I'd Like to Teach the World to Sing*](#),^[28] sung by the Hillside Singers had a cute little rhythm but promoted world-wide brotherly love in a commercial. The mass media can in fact be used for good.

Of course you all remember the lyrics of John Lennon and Paul McCartney's *All You Need Is Love*.^[29] That was all we really needed at that time, love. That was all we felt the whole world needed, love. That's what we thought was the solution to the world's problems, love; love for God and love for fellow man. As Jesus said,

A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye love one another. [\[30\]](#)

Apostle Paul went on to say,

All the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this; Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. [\[31\]](#)

He later wrote one of the most beautiful and thought-provoking chapters in the entire ***Bible***, which I will reprint here for your reflection and encouragement. I will leave it in the original King James, although I'll drop some of the "ths," and change the word "charity" to "love" for better clarity.

Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not love, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal. And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not love, I am nothing. And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not love, it profits me nothing.

Love suffers long, and is kind; love envies not; love vaunts not itself, is not puffed up, Does not behave itself unseemly, seeks not her own, is not easily provoked, thinks no evil; Rejoices not in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth; Bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. Love never fails: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.

For we know in part, and we prophesy in part, But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away. When I was a child, I spoke as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known. And now abides faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love.[\[32\]](#)

The songs which I have mentioned above surely have a Christian element in them. Some admittedly have more than others. They were very popular songs sung during the 60s to 70s with a powerful affect on their audience, you and me. Surely they were more meaningful than much of what is presently being pumped out by the music industry. But perhaps today's music is a fulfillment of Jesus' own words which He spoke to His disciples when He was asked,

What shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?[\[33\]](#)

Part of Jesus' replies was,

And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.[\[34\]](#)

Are we seeing the love of many waxing cold even in the songs we listen to for entertainment? Let me continue in my argument. I have previously applied the following verse to the banking system in an earlier article.

For thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived.[\[35\]](#)

But another element of the sorceries helping to deceive the whole world could clearly be the music and entertainment industries which promote materialism and the worship of money and the things that money can buy. The Bilderberg group contains financial barons and those who own the movie and television industries, among others. The music and entertainment industries promote self-worship and even an open worship of or fascination with the dark side and Satan himself. Could the sorceries that deceive the nations be in fact the power of the mass media: music, television, radio, video, computer games, and the like? Are there spiritual realities behind these devices, inspiring them?

Scotland's Alan Watt, former author of radio show and website *Cutting Through the Matrix*, said,

Never watch the television. Never watch the television. It's the greatest scientific indoctrination tool ever devised. Have you figured that out? It has changed the whole culture of nations, not just one nation. Why do you think it was mandatory that everyone have access to televisions in Britain by the government? Why do you think China is under the same program right now, because they love to be

entertained? Do you really believe that? Most of your ideas and opinions come from television, because you mimic what you see. Never watch the television. You can't even watch a movie unless you do it critically.[\[36\]](#)

Could the mass media with music, television, radio, video, computer games, rock concerts and the like, be the “sirens” of today’s modern world? The "sirens" of Greek mythology were beautiful woman who

sat on the shore and sang with voices seductive and compelling that anyone who heard their song became absolutely mesmerized with them. So mesmerized, in fact, that they became obsessed with reaching the shore to get closer to the sound.[\[37\]](#)

But the sailors were being deceived, as the Sirens were actually some sort of beasts luring the sailors to their death.

The term "siren" is used both in ancient and modern mythology, as well as in modern language in general, to describe something that is simultaneously dangerous and compelling. In later myths and legends, any creature that lured a man in, only to cause harm, might be considered "a siren" in the general context of the term.[\[38\]](#)

Were the ancient Greek mythologies actually warning us of the spiritual realities and how music and beauty can be part of it? Is it any wonder that today’s top musicians are beautiful woman, many of whose seductive sexual charms are used to lure us into accepting the message of their music, which may in fact be dangerous to us spiritually? Are the beautiful actresses or handsome actors on television or in the movies there for the same reason, to get us to accept the message that is being propagated?

I propose that America is deceiving the world with her sorceries. America is contaminating the world through her ungodly music. She is contaminating the world through her

ungodly television programs, movies and addictive computer programs.

America is contaminating the world through her humanistic, atheistic, anti-God philosophy found in education, science, economics, and politics and propagated in the movies, music, television programs for both old and young alike. Surely it is by the “sorcery” of modern mass media and the Internet that the world is being convinced that violent acts are a normal day occurrence, that traditional sexual limits are out of fashion and restrictive, that the worship of material things, and man himself will bring ultimate happiness and fulfillment.

Man is being convinced that God is dead and that man through his own evolutionary process will succeed in bringing peace on earth and good will to all men without the need of God or the supernatural “myths” of our “unenlightened” ancestors. May God help us! For those interested in watching a documentary about the satanic side of Hollywood view the following link below entitled *Hollywood Unmasked* by Dr. Jason Kovar.[39]

Notes:

- [1] [Revelation 18:22](#)
- [2] [Revelation 18:2](#)
- [3] [John 6:63](#)
- [4] [Proverbs 18:21](#)
- [5] [Matthew 12:34](#) O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks.
- [6] [James 3:1-18](#)
- [7] [Matthew 12:36-37](#)
- [8] [John 12:48](#)
- [9] [James 4:17](#)
- [10] [Matthew 15:11, 17-20](#)
- [11] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=E4rYJoVILjo> (accessed 03/2016)
- [12] [2Timothy 3:1-5, 7 & 13](#)
- [13] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Rl-yszPdRTk> (accessed 10/2016)
- [14] [Deuteronomy 16:19-20](#)
- [15] [Jeremiah 22:3](#)
- [16] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=xxkwlnesPe4> (accessed 03/2016)

- [17] [Revelation 21:4](#)
- [18] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=vWwgrjjIMXA> (accessed 03/2016)
- [19] https://www.goodreads.com/author/quotes/6188.Georg_Wilhelm_Friedrich_Hegel (accessed 03/2016)
- [20] <http://www.brainyquote.com/quotes/quotes/g/georgesant101521.html> (accessed 03/2016)
- [21] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=8qPUJhy0Dz4> (accessed 03/2016)
- [22] [Ecclesiastes 7:3,4](#)
- [23] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oT57tjz9py8> (accessed 03/2016)
- [24] [John 15:13](#)
- [25] [1John 3:11-18](#)
- [26] Cyril J Davey, Sadhu Sundar Singh, STL Books, 1980, pg. 133.
- [27] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=jjNgn4r6SOA> (accessed 03/2016)
- [28] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ib-Qiyklq-Q> (accessed 03/2016)
- [29] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=EKiqthx0GKw> (accessed 03/2016)
- [30] [John 13:34](#)
- [31] [Galatians 5:14](#)
- [32] [1Corinthians 13:1-13](#)
- [33] [Matthew 24:3](#)
- [34] [Matthew 24:12](#)
- [35] [Revelation 18:23](#)
- [36] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=QmBymKXgrV4> (accessed 03/2016)
- [37] <http://www.gods-and-monsters.com/sirens-mythology.html> (03/2016)
- [38] Ibid
- [39] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=suhTM9LMi9E> (accessed 03/2016)

Chapter 30

Football, Fatima and Fado – the FIFA-Olympic Connection

The story goes that the last dictator of Portugal, J.A. [Salazar](#), who was Prime Minister from 1932 to 1968, when asked what was necessary to rule the country, responded with the three ‘Fs:’ football, Fatima and Fado. He was saying that all that he needed to control the country was sports, religion and music. [Fatima](#), of course, stood for the religious element. The town of Fatima was where the famous three Catholic children were supposed to have seen a vision and to have received a message from the Virgin Mary. The apparition event took place just prior to WWI. Portuguese tradition has it that Mary’s appearance at Fatima and the public’s embracing response was the reason that Portugal was able to remain neutral during the war.

The ‘F’ for Fado stood for the typical sad folk music popular in Portugal at the time, while the ‘F’ for football, obviously, stood for sports. During those years Benfica was Portugal’s greatest football team, and Eusebio, a famous striker, was the star. When a famous Italian team offered Eusebio a large contract to come play in Italy, Salazar prohibited it, saying that Eusebio was a national treasure. Salazar knew the value of football over the masses and so kept their champion at home.

We all remember the words of Karl Marx, who said that religion was the opiate of the masses. Salazar amplified the opiate to include the music and sports industries, which at the time of Salazar were still in their infancy in comparison with today. But of course the Romans and Greeks had used sports in the same way. In the time of Rome’s decline it is said that the people demanded more circus and bread even while Rome was being surrounded by its enemies.

Today we could amplify the list of opiates further and include the giant commercial centers where thousands rush every weekend to shop for all the things that money can buy. These are the new temples of mammon, where the faithful go to worship the new idols. We buy gadgets that give us more time on the Internet where we can watch more sports, music or religious events, or even have Internet sex or watch movies that promote all the values we don't want our children or grandchildren to have. And yet, with all our things and momentary pleasure, we still do not satisfy the deepest yearning of our soul for truth, love and eternal happiness. Like the Apostle John has said,

Love not the world neither the things of the world for all that is of the world, the lust of the eyes, the lust of the flesh and the pride of life, is not of the father but of the world. And the world passes away and the lust thereof, but whosoever doeth the will of God abides forever.[\[1\]](#)

Jesus said something similar,

A man's life consists not in the abundance of things which he possesses.[\[2\]](#)

Apostle James put it a different way. He said,

Ye adulterers and adulteresses know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God.[\[3\]](#)

The apostle is saying here that if we are lusting after the things of the world, or living for them only, we are committing spiritual adultery with the world. That is why we will never be ultimately happy. Man is not just a physical being. He is spiritual being, and he must seek first his spiritual needs. As Jesus said,

Seek ye first the kingdom of God and his righteousness and all these things shall be added unto you.[\[4\]](#)

Man does not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceed out of the mouth of God.[\[5\]](#)

In the *Old Testament* the Lord said through Isaiah,

Why do ye spend money for that which is not bread? And you labour for that which satisfies not? Hearken diligently unto me, and eat ye that which is good, and let your soul delight itself in fatness. Incline you ear, and come unto me: hear and your soul shall live.[\[6\]](#)

Man is constantly trying to find happiness in the things that are not eternal and therefore in the end do not bring ultimate happiness. His amusements help him escape from the predicament he finds himself in. They help him escape from his life without meaning and purpose. They help him escape the daily grind of making a living to acquire more things. In the end, he winds up empty, wondering if this is all there is to life. He ends up concluding he should “[Eat drink and be merry, for tomorrow we may die.](#)”[\[7\]](#) He spends his time trying to take care of and satisfy his body and its needs and desires, while neglecting his spirit, his eternal soul which will last for eternity. Like the old poem [He Fed His Body But Starved His Soul.](#)

There was a man that some folks called great,
said he'd done good, had grappled with fate.
He'd won some fame and some riches, too.
But in the crowd there were those that knew;
the soul of him so miserably small,
that real greatness he knew not at all.
For all through life he had missed the real goal,
he fed his body but starved his soul.
He had no time for the little things,
that so much peace and contentment brings;
a faithful friend or a child's tender look,
a promise sweet from the dear Old Book,
a little talk with a Friend Divine,
a little walk where the wildflowers twine.

He was just half a man, not well rounded, whole;
who fed his body but starved his soul.

And when that day of accounting came
in God's own time, death called his name;
then the poor, frail, worthless, empty shell,
he groomed and fed and tended so well,
was left behind just an earthbound clod,
while his shriveled soul went to face his God.
All unprepared and paid the full toll,
for he had fed his body and starved his soul.

So come my friend and take time today,
to read God's Word and walk in His ways.
We'll follow the trail that higher goes,
to regions where the soul larger grows.
You'll never hear them say of you then,
just one of the common herd of men.
So if you would be well-rounded and whole,
read God's Word to nourish your soul.[8]

Are we feeding our physical body with food and drink and entertainments of the flesh to the full, while our spirits are empty and longing for satisfaction? Do we feel like the Rolling Stones' famous song, [*I Can't Get No Satisfaction*](#).^[9] We can't get no satisfaction because all we're trying to do is satisfy the flesh. But the trouble is that the flesh is never satisfied. It always wants more and more and never has enough. Like the **Proverb** says,

The eyes of man are never satisfied. [\[10\]](#)

No matter how many beautiful woman a man has seen, he will always look at another one. Like the rich Romans in the time of Rome's great wealth and abundance who would attend banquets full of food and sex and alcohol. They would eat to the filling of their stomachs, only to vomit it all up, so they could fill themselves up once again. Like some of the scandals of recent times of rich politicians or wealthy businessmen well in years

seeking sex with young girls hardly eighteen years of age. The flesh is never satisfied, it always wants more. But as Jesus said,

The flesh profits nothing. [\[11\]](#)

But in this article I wanted to look at the World Cup and Olympics and see what kind of affect they have on the economies of the countries that host the games. I also wanted to see if these sports events are part of the spiritual web woven to catch men within its borders and prohibit them from finding the way, the truth and the life. John Perkin's [Economic Hitman](#)^[12] which we have talked about earlier, explains of the infrastructure contracts that Third World countries are forced to accept from the World Bank and International Monetary Fund. These contracts ultimately leave the country poorer than when they started. Are FIFA and the Olympics part of the great financial sorcery to bind heavier burdens on the poor economies of the world in order to keep those economies and those peoples submissive to the international bankers?

Some time ago I did a study about the countries who had hosted World Cup and Olympic events. Some articles on the subject and a YouTube link can be found at the following endnote.^[13] I had seen the affects of these games in Portugal, Greece, and Spain, where the governments invested large amounts of euros loaned from Europe. These loans went to improve infrastructure and to build the needed stadiums in the hope of reaping the financial benefits of the games. In the end we found out that the financial benefits hardly warranted such a financial investment, and the government and people were left with a big financial loan to pay back.

That's why we saw the manifestations in Brazil before the World Cup soccer games, as some have come to realize that the games bring no relief to the poor and needy. They only serve to increase the wealth of the wealthy through construction contracts. Some cities are left with stadiums they do not know how they will pay off or maintain. But since football is part of the web to keep

men caught, as Salazar so confessed, the Internationals keep sports as a high priority on their agenda. They want a pacific populace. They want a population which will not rise up against their masters, the financial elite. They want a population that will submit and adhere to the financial injustices perpetrated against them.

They bind heavy burdens grievous to be born and they themselves touch not the burdens with one finger. [\[14\]](#)

The bankers and politicians create big national debts and then expect the population to pay it back to them. Something is wrong with this picture, but the silent majority blindly go like sheep to the slaughter. Sports is one of today's opiates that keep them walking in submission to their corrupt leaders.

But one of the problems today is the Muslim youth, many of whom have not integrated into the Western society. They remain aloof and therefore out of control through the normal methods of manipulation. The religious element usually helps governments control their populations. They'll gain financial or influential favors because of their cooperation with the government. But radical Islamic movements from the Middle East embittered by the events that have occurred there are in this case feeding rebellion and violent acts of aggression as we have recently seen in France. But that's a whole other topic. Let's keep to FIFA and sports.

Of course FIFA always justifies the extra expense for the host country, saying it is good for the country's pride and national identity. Local government politicians will also parrot FIFA's mantra knowing that big money coming into the country will mean contracts for their friends and supporters and something more in their own pockets. In the end, FIFA always manages to walk away richer than before, while the host country almost always has a great burden to pay and often some "white elephant" stadiums that are a burden on the local economy. In recent years, only Germany and the USA have had World Cup or Olympic

events in which they have managed to break even. Many countries are waking up to the fact that the World Cup and Olympics are bad business.

But the truth is that for generations governments have used sports as a way to distract the population, keep them content, and forment national pride. Sports are an amusement. They keep men from thinking about their own problems. A man may have a poor and miserable job and life, but he can find self-esteem in his favorite champion who helps his team to victory over their rivals. The spectator gains euphoria through the victory his team wins on the playing field. His mind is distracted from his own wretched condition and he finds a sense of meaning in his favorite player and team.

Interestingly enough, the word amusement means “away from thinking.” During the time of the spectacle the fan is not thinking about his problems, but is absorbed in the game, as if he himself were playing. He forgets his problems and worries and dissatisfactions with life and his government, and for those moments he is amused. The word “muse” comes from the Greek for “to think” or “to ponder.” As in the word “atheist” the “a” before a word is used as a negative. A theist is a person who believes in God. An atheist is a person who does not believe in God. “Muse” means to think or ponder. “Amuse” means to not think or ponder or to be away from thinking or pondering. We seek out amusements for that very reason. They help us get away from thinking about our problems, whatever they may be.

Karl Marx predicted that the poor man would eventually turn against the rich and over throw their unjust rule over the poor. Why has not this prediction come to pass, when the poor far outnumber the rich? As the Caesars of Rome and as Salazar of Portugal confessed and the elite of the world know, amusements - whether they be music, sports or religious events - are important to control the masses and govern a nation. The rich have learned they need to share a tiny bit of their wealth with the poor to keep them passively submissive. Today we have the middle class,

though many claim it's a diminishing sector. We also have politicians who are suppose to be attentive to the needs and wants of their constituents, but are actually controlled by big money and its interests. It's a sad day for the poor man. But never mind - let's go have a beer and watch the game! Shall we?

Notes:

- [1] [1John 2:15-17](#)
- [2] [Luke 12:15](#)
- [3] [James 4: 4](#)
- [4] [Matthew 6:33](#)
- [5] [Matthew 4: 4](#)
- [6] [Isaiah 55:2-3](#)
- [7] [1Corinthians15:32](#) If after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, What advantages it me, if the dead rise not? Let us eat and drink; for to-morrow we die.
- [8] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ciSAMY9c--A> (accessed 03/2016)
- [9] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=nrIPxIFzDi0> (accessed 03/2016)
- [10] [Proverbs 27:20](#) Hell and destruction are never full; so the eyes of man are never satisfied.
- [11] [John 6:63](#)
- [12] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=y-a6jzU0YgQ> (accessed 03/2016)
- [13] <http://www.triplepundit.com/2011/11/ugly-side-beautiful-game/#>
(03/16) <http://www.theatlantic.com/business/archive/2012/07/3-reasons-why-hosting-the-olympics-is-a-losers-game/260111/> (accessed 03/2016)
<http://revista.drclas.harvard.edu/book/hosting-olympics-and-world-cup>
(03/16)
http://rozvojovky.vse.cz/2SM412/presentations/Bjornstad_Aleksander-Hiltunen%20Tommi-SA_economy_and_FIFA_WC2010-paper.pdf
(03/2016) https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Oi9gTj_i3Nw (accessed 03/2016)
- [14] [Luke 11:46](#)

Chapter 31

Israel Has Forsaken Its Maker And Builds Temples!

Since we have been talking about football stadiums, and infrastructures and how they have been used to put government in debt, I wanted to touch for a moment on another aspect of false religious service predominant in the world today and perhaps since the dawn of man, that is, the deception of building worship.

I just recently took a ten-day walk to *Santiago de Compostela* in Spain. My daughter and I walked the 200 kilometers to the great cathedral made in honor of Saint James the Apostle. Tradition has it that two of James' disciples brought his body to Spain after he had been killed by Herod in Jerusalem during one of the early persecutions of the new Christian sect. Martin Sheen has produced a film called "The Way" based on this traditional walk which you may enjoy watching.[1]

Supposedly Saint James' tomb had been lost, but later, it was found by a hermit who saw stars, probably meteors, falling from heaven onto a field. The name "Santiago" means "Saint James" and "Compostela" means "field of stars." The man informed the local Bishop Teodomiro and an expedition was made to search the field. They discovered the old remains of three people. Somehow, the Bishop realized the bones were none other than Santiago and his two disciples. King Alfonse II, the king of that area of Spain, put his approval to the project and the idea to build a cathedral was soon in the making. *Santiago de Compostela* soon became a place of pilgrimage, and thousands travelled there seeking forgiveness of sins, healing and other answers to prayer.[2]

My daughter and I had a beautiful ten days of walking through forests and fields, along rivers, through quaint villages on our way to Santiago. The beautiful scenery lifted our hearts and minds to the Lord in praise and thanksgiving for the wonderful world He has given us. However, on our arrival to Santiago, the spirit

changed as we entered the city. Now we were approached by pretty young shop girls inviting us to shop or to eat in their local. The streets were packed with busy shoppers. The restaurants were full. Beggars were on every street corner, even arguing over who could beg at the entrance to the cathedral. I was reminded of the book of *Revelation* and the “filthy city Babylon.”

When we saw the huge cathedral towering over the other buildings, I thought to myself, “Was this building the climax of our journey?” As I entered the ‘hallowed’ edifice, the Scriptures came flooding into my mind. Saint Stephen, the first Christian martyr, had cried out,

Howbeit the Most High dwells not in temples made with hands; Heaven is my throne, and earth is my footstool: what house will ye build me? Have not my hand made all these things?[\[3\]](#)

His proclamation so infuriated the Temple-worshipping, rule-keeping, attendance-minded, power-hungry, money-making Jews who refused to obey the Word of the Lord that they straightway stoned Stephen to death, while the future Apostle Paul – Saul, looked on with approval.

Later Paul himself, while witnessing near the famous Greek temples in Athens, recalled Stephen’s words and said something similar,

God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwells not in temples made with hands; neither is worshipped with men’s hands, as though he needed anything, seeing he gives to all life, and breath, and all things; and has made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth,...; that they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us: for in him we live, and move, and have our being.[\[4\]](#)

Jesus Himself was not impressed with the Temple buildings in Jerusalem. Reading from the *New Testament* we find the following:

And as Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to him for to show him the buildings of the temple. And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? Verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another that shall not be thrown down. [\[5\]](#)

Of course, Jesus knew the Romans would come and destroy the Temple in the near future. But even in the *Old Testament* we find God's disgust with His people over their temple-worship. In *Hosea* we read,

For Israel has forgotten his Maker, and builds temples. [\[6\]](#)

In *Jeremiah* we again see how the people trust in their building and temple attendance rather than in their obedience to God's Word.

The word of that came to Jeremiah from the Lord, saying, Stand in the gate of the Lord's house, and proclaim there this word and say,... Trust ye not in lying words, saying, The temple of the Lord, the temple of the Lord, The temple of the Lord, are these...Behold, ye trust in lying words that cannot profit. Will ye steal, murder, and commit adultery, and swear falsely, and burn incense unto Baal, and walk after other gods whom ye know not; and come and stand before me in this house, and say, We are delivered to do all these abominations? ...And now, because ye have done all these works, says the Lord, and I spoke unto you, rising up early and speaking, but ye heard not; and I called you, but ye answered not; therefore will I do unto this house, which is called by my name, wherein ye trust, and unto the place which I gave to you and to your fathers,... And I will cast you out of my sight, as I have cast out all your brethren,... Therefore pray not for this people, neither lift up cry nor prayer for them, neither make intercession to me: for I will not hear thee. [\[7\]](#)

King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon would come and destroy Jerusalem and the Temple because of Judah's disobedience to the Word of the Lord. The people would not hearken to the voice of the Lord through His prophets. They thought their temple-worship and church attendance would save them. But in the end they suffered the ultimate penalty for their rebellion against God.

Jesus, in the *New Testament*, when talking to the woman at the well made a startling comment showing that God was not interested in temple-worship.

Jesus said unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour comes, when ye shall neither in this mountain (where the Samaritans had their temple), nor yet at Jerusalem (where the Jews had their Temple), worship the Father. ...But the hour comes, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeks such to worship him. God is a spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. [\[8\]](#)

God wants our lives to be in loving obedience to Him. He wants our thoughts and actions to be guided by His loving Spirit. He wants us to love Him, not just with words, but in deed and in truth, [\[9\]](#) with all our heart, with all soul, and with all our mind. [\[10\]](#)

But church buildings and temples are big business. The people are persuaded that they show their dedication to God by their buildings to His name. They build massive edifications that often take generations to complete. Their up-keep is immense. But today many lay empty. In England we find them sold for discotheques, warehouses, homes, shops or museums. They may at one time have been a witness of man's belief in God, but today in some countries they are a witness to man's unbelief. So much money was invested in those building which could have been spent in helping the poor, in training good Christian teachers and Missionaries, in broadcasting the Gospel on radio, television, in music, movies and the printed page for old and young alike, to really help mankind to worship God in spirit and in truth.

Man, with his buildings, prides himself in the works of his own hands, rather than in obeying God and giving to the poor and living humbly. When I see the great buildings built by some Christian denominations it saddens me, knowing that that money could have been used in a more fruitful way. But the false shepherds glory in their buildings as if they will last forever and as if they are laying up treasures in Heaven by building them. Lord, deliver us from the worship of buildings and the religions that are built around them, whatever they may be. The greatest travesty is that the religion gets built around church or temple-attendance and not on obedience to God and His Word.

Today's modern worship has its own building for today's modern-day gods: football stadiums and shopping malls are some of the new temples of worship where the devout go to worship their gods and offer their sacrifices, the money they have worked so hard to earn. These are the new temples of Mammon to the gods of materialism and man's adulation of himself.

Where and how do we worship? Do we feel satisfied that God is with us because of our faithful church attendance and keeping of religious rules, but then we do not have the love of God within us to love our wife, child, son-in-law, neighbor or workmate? Are we worshipping God in spirit and in truth by the way we live our lives in accordance to His law of love, to do unto others as we would have them to do unto us, if we were in the same given situation?[\[11\]](#) Is love the mandate by which we interact with those in our sphere of influence? If not, we should call upon Jesus. He has promised to forgive us and to fill us with His Spirit to make us capable of even loving the unlovable. If you need Him, call upon Him today. He's only a prayer away. You won't be disappointed.

Now back to our study on *Where is America in Bible Prophecy?*

Notes:

- [1] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=o5VZKWcgw6c> (accessed 03/2016)
- [2] <http://www.red2000.com/spain/santiago/history.html> (accessed 03/2016)
- [3] [Acts 7:48-50](#)
- [4] [Acts 17:24-28](#)
- [5] [Matthew 24:1-2](#)
- [6] [Hosea 8:14](#)
- [7] [Jeremiah 7:1-16](#)
- [8] [John 4:21-24](#)
- [9] [1John 3:18](#) My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth.
- [10] [Matthew 22:37](#) Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.
- [11] [Luke 6:31](#) And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise.

Chapter 32

Arms, Arms and More Arms! – It's Blood Money, Baby!

America has also polluted the world through her sales of armaments and weapons of war. Although other countries also sell arms, the USA has had the biggest share in sales of military equipment and weapons of death and destruction. Researcher Michael Klare wrote back in May, 2013,

International weapons sales have proved to be a thriving global business in economically tough times. According to the Congressional Research Service (CRS), such sales reached an impressive \$85 billion in 2011, nearly double the figure for 2010. Arms sales have always served multiple functions. Valuable trade commodities, weapons can prove immensely lucrative for companies that specialize in making such products. Between 2008 and 2011, for example, U.S. firms sold \$146 billion worth of military hardware to foreign countries, according to the latest CRS figures.[\[1\]](#)

A *New York Times* article from October 2013 says,

According to IHS Jane's, an industry consulting and analysis company, the total global arms trade revenue in 2012 was estimated to be \$73.5 billion, and the United States had a 39 percent share.[\[2\]](#)

That's around 18.4 billion in arms sales for the USA. Another article in *Aljazeera America* from March 2015 informs us that,

The international arms trade is booming, with America the major driver of its growth, according to a new report from the Stockholm International Peace Research Institute

(SIPRI). SIPRI researchers Pieter D. Wezeman and Siemon T. Wezeman found that the “volume of international transfers of major weapons” from 2010 to 2014 was 16 percent higher than it was in the four preceding years. The United States was the biggest exporter during that period, ahead of Russia and China. U.S. weaponry accounted for 31 percent of exports from 2010 to 2014, the study states.[3]

In August 2015, Amnesty International reiterated the point that the US holds 31% of the international arms sales. Quoting from the Stockholm International Peace Research Institute they claim that the total global military expenditure has risen from US\$1.14 trillion in 2001 to US\$1.711 trillion in 2014, a rise of 50%.[4]

Another article from *The Arms Industry: Control Arms Campaign* written in back October 2003, explains the horrid state of the arms industry.

The arms industry is unlike any other. It operates without regulation. It suffers from widespread corruption and bribes. And it makes its profits on the back of machines designed to kill and maim human beings. So who profits most from this murderous trade? It is none other than the five permanent members of the UN Security Council—the USA, UK, France, Russia, and China. Together, they are responsible for eighty eight per cent of reported conventional arms exports. “We can’t have it both ways. We can’t be both the world’s leading champion of peace and the world’s leading supplier of arms,” so said Former US President Jimmy Carter, during his 1976 presidential campaign.[5]

A more recent article from April 2016 echoes earlier reports:

World military spending rose 1 percent in 2015, the first annual increase in four years, a Stockholm think tank said

on Tuesday as it estimated 10 percent of this could cover the costs of global goals aiming to end poverty and hunger in 15 years. The Stockholm International Peace Research Institute (SIPRI) said military expenditure nudged up to almost \$1.7 trillion last year, with the United States accounting for by far the greatest amount despite its spending dipping 2.4 percent to \$596 billion.^[6]

That would mean America has around 35% of world military spending. Any way we look at it, arms sales are big business.

Revelation tells us,

And in her (Babylon the Whore) was found the blood of the prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.^[7]

President and former General Dwight E. Eisenhower warned of the danger of the Military Industrial Complex back in the beginning of the 1960s. He predicted that the Military Industrial Complex would continue to encroach on the power of the government. In his farewell speech in 1961 he said the following:

We annually spend on military security more than the net income of all United States corporations. This conjunction of an immense military establishment and a large arms industry is new in the American experience. The total influence -- economic, political, even spiritual -- is felt in every city, every State house, every office of the Federal government. We recognize the imperative need for this development. Yet we must not fail to comprehend its grave implications. Our toil, resources and livelihood are all involved; so is the very structure of our society.

In the councils of government, we must guard against the acquisition of unwarranted influence, whether sought or unsought, by the military-industrial complex. The potential for the disastrous rise of misplaced power exists and will

persist. We must never let the weight of this combination endanger our liberties or democratic processes. We should take nothing for granted. Only an alert and knowledgeable citizenry can compel the proper meshing of the huge industrial and military machinery of defense with our peaceful methods and goals, so that security and liberty may prosper together.[\[8\]](#)

In talking about the waste caused by excessive military spending, Eisenhower, a former military man himself, had previously said the following:

Every gun that is made, every warship launched, every rocket fired signifies, in the final sense, a theft from those who hunger and are not fed, those who are cold and are not clothed. This world in arms is not spending money alone. It is spending the sweat of its laborers, the genius of its scientists, (and) the hopes of its children.

The cost of one modern heavy bomber is this: a modern brick school in more than 30 cities. It is two electric power plants, each serving a town of 60,000 (in) population. It is two fine, fully-equipped hospitals. It is some 50 miles of concrete highway. We pay for a single fighter plane with a half-million bushels of wheat. We pay for a single destroyer with new homes that could have housed more than 8,000 people.

Is this, I repeat, the best way of life to be found on the road the world has been taking? (No), this is not a way of life at all, in any true sense. Under the cloud of threatening war, it is humanity hanging from a cross of iron.[\[9\]](#)

In spite of Eisenhower's warning, the percentage of America's military spending continues to increase every year with approximately half of the Federal Budget going to military spending. Read William Hartung's book *Prophets of War: Lockheed Martin and the Making of the Military-Industrial*

Complex[\[10\]](#) if you still don't believe me, or his short article on the internet entitled *There's No Business Like the Arms Business: Weapons "R" Us (But You'd Never Know It)*.[\[11\]](#)

We are reminded of the verses in **Genesis**,

And God saw that wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart.[\[12\]](#)

War is big business and the bankers know it. Read F. William Engdahl's ***A Century of War***,[\[13\]](#) or watch him on YouTube.[\[14\]](#) Bankers make their greatest profits from war and the national debts that incur from them. Yes, our excessive military budget and spending grieves God in His heart. Like Brigadier General Smedley Butler said,

War is a racket. It is the only one international in scope. It is the only one in which the profits are reckoned in dollars and the losses in lives.[\[15\]](#)

Dwight L Moody, the famous Christian evangelist, when speaking after the Civil War about the then possible war with Spain, said the following:

War, awful war! Never has our country had more need of your prayers than at the present time. God keep us from war, if it be possible, and God keep hate of Spain out of our hearts! I have not met a man who served in the last war who wants to see another. God knows that I do not want to see the carnage and destruction that such a war would bring. God pity America and Spain. There are many mothers who will be bereaved, many homes broken up, if we have war. Have you thought of this?[\[16\]](#)

Right now as I am writing this war is taking place in both Ukraine and Gaza. It is taking place in Syria and Iraq. How many times will we fight “wars to end all wars” or “wars to make it safe for democracy”? When I was faced with the prospect of war as a youth, it was the words from the *New Testament* that spoke to me and which I could not remove from my consciousness. The *Beatitudes* assured me that the war machine would not get the blessing.

Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled. Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy. Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God. Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God. Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.[\[17\]](#)

Jesus went on to say,

Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also. And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain. Give to him that asks thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away.

Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. But I say unto you, Love

your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he makes his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust. For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so? Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.
[\[18\]](#)

When the Apostle Peter wanted to defend Jesus in the Garden of Gethsemane on the Mount of Olives, Jesus told him,

Put up again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.[\[19\]](#)

Apostle James went on to write that it was the lust for power and possessions that caused wars.

From whence come wars and fighting among you? come they not hence, even of your lusts that war in your members? Ye lust, and have not: ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: ye fight and war, ... that ye may consume it upon your lusts.[\[20\]](#)

It seems to me that the whole world is groaning for deliverance from man's incessant wars. We used to sing "Give Peace a Chance."[\[21\]](#) But it seems the world has almost given up on peace and the expectation of peace. Israel invades Gaza resulting in hundreds of innocent deaths, and all we hear is Hamas is using civilians as human shields. When will it stop?

And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?[\[22\]](#)

I will need to add a comment here as the situation in Iraq and Syria has recently deteriorated with ISIS's killing of American and British journalist/photographers kidnapped or captured in the Middle East. We need to remember that ISIS was a creation of America's military policy in Syria and Libya. We need to also remember that the hatred that is manifested against America and Britain is the result of our military and political position in the Middle East for the last fifty years or more, which many believe has been manipulated by the International Bankers.

We have sowed death and destruction to support Israel's right for existence. We have rejected Christ's commandment to go into all the world and preach the Gospel to all nations teaching the ways of peace and brotherly love.[\[23\]](#) We have given up our duty to share His message of love to all men. Instead we have fed the world from Hollywood's froth and filth. We have submitted our Godly convictions to those of the bankers and military men and politicians who together in the bed of war make their living. We will reap what we have sowed.

Today's terrorist could be tomorrow's political leader. [Menachem Begin](#) was a terrorist in the Irgun organization that killed British mandated troops in Palestine before the 1948 declaration of independence.[\[24\]](#) George Washington led guerilla warfare against traditional British troops to later become President of a new nation. Gerry Adams of IRA's Sinn Féin later became member of Ireland's Parliament and the British House of Commons. [Mario Soares](#) in Portugal was a long time political activist frequently arrested and detained by the secret police. He was twice sentenced to live abroad but eventually became both Prime Minister and President of Portugal.[\[25\]](#)

We cannot hold back the winds of change. But we can influence them for good as much as possible. We can use dialogue, reasoning, and diplomacy in as many ways as are possible. The voice of the poor and downtrodden, whether they are Arab, Asian or African, must be heard. We can and will use force to protect our own, like [Sergeant York](#) showed.[\[26\]](#) But it

must be tempered with love and mercy, like Dr. George Ellis emphasized in the Scottish commander's patient, controlled response to the terrorist attacks in Yemen in 1967, which we covered in a previous chapter.

But remember, in the world where might makes right, God's people will always be marginalized, persecuted or maligned. Nevertheless, we must try to influence, as much as we can, worldly men to make Godly decisions. We may be called cowards or communist sympathizers because of it. But ultimately, we are called by our committed Christian conscience to speak the truth to our neighbor.^[27] Our hope is that he too will come to know and love Him who is the Creator of the universe and our God, the Prince of Peace, Jesus Christ!^[28]

Notes:

- [1] Michael Klare, *Do Arms Sales by Major Powers Signal a Move to a 21st Century Cold (Or Hot) War?*, Tom Dispatch, May 30, 2013
<http://www.alternet.org/do-arms-sales-major-powers-signal-move-21st-century-cold-or-hot-war> (accessed 03/2016)
- [2] Edward Wong and Nicola Clark, *China's Arms Industry Makes Global Inroads*, NY Times, October 20, 2013
http://www.nytimes.com/2013/10/21/world/asia/chinas-arms-industry-makes-global-inroads.html?_r=0 (accessed 03/2016)
- [3] <http://www.reuters.com/article/us-global-military-goals-idUSKCN0X12EQ> (03/2016)
- [4] <https://www.amnesty.org/en/latest/news/2015/08/killer-facts-the-scale-of-the-global-arms-trade/> (accessed 03/2014)
- [5] <http://www.globalissues.org/article/74/the-arms-trade-is-big-business> (03/16)
- [6] <http://news.trust.org/item/20160404220403-g66yf?view=print> (03/2016)
- [7] [Revelation 18:24](#)
- [8] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Gg-jvHynP9Y> (accessed 03/2016)
- [9] <http://www.informationclearinghouse.info/article9743.htm> (accessed 03/16)
- [10] https://www.amazon.com/Prophets-War-Lockheed-Military-Industrial-Complex/dp/1568586973?ie=UTF8&ref_=nosim&tag=tomdispatch-20

- [11] http://www.tomdispatch.com/post/176169/tomgram%3A_william_hartung._how_to_arm_a_%22volatile%22_planet/
- [12] [Genesis 6:5-6](#)
- [13] http://www.takeoverworld.info/pdf/Engdahl_Century_of_War_book.pdf (03/16)
- [14] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GVctGHYQcOw> (accessed 03/16)
- [15] Smedly Butler, *War is a Racket*, 1935.
<http://www.ratical.org/ratville/CAH/warisaracket.pdf> (accessed 2016)
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=EI3lckqaSk0> (accessed 03/2016)
http://www.brainyquote.com/quotes/authors/s/smedley_butler.html (03/16)
- [16] <http://www.biblebelievers.com/moody/12.html> (accessed 2016)
- [17] [Matthew 5:3-12](#)
- [18] [Matthew 5:38-48](#)
- [19] [Matthew 26:52](#)
- [20] [James 4:1-3](#)
- [21] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=0yU0JuE1jTk> (accessed 03/2016)
- [22] [Revelation 6:10](#)
- [23] [Mark 16:15](#) And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.
- [24] http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Menachem_Begin (accessed 03/2016)
- [25] http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/M%C3%A1rio_Soares (accessed 03/2016)
- [26] http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Alvin_C._York (accessed 03/2016)
- [27] [Zechariah 8:16](#) These are the things that ye shall do; Speak ye every man the truth to his neighbour; execute the judgment of truth and peace in your gates.
- [28] [Isaiah 9:6](#) For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.

Chapter 33

Israel of Old and America: a Parallel History

At this point I would like to spend some time looking at the similarities between the nation of Israel in antiquity, its rise and fall, and the United States of America. The *Bible* clearly indicates that

The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God.[\[1\]](#)

Has America as a nation forgotten God? The *Bible* also says that

Righteousness exalts a nation, but sin is a reproach to any people.[\[2\]](#)

In righteousness, God exalts a nation, but in the nation's rebellion to Him, He brings it down. In *Hosea*, which we have quoted earlier, we read,

For Israel has forgotten his Maker, and builds temples; and Judah has multiplied fenced cities: but I will send a fire upon his cities, and it shall devour the palaces thereof.[\[3\]](#)

In other words, neither Israel's temples of supposed worship nor Judah's military defenses would protect them in the day of God's judgments against them. And they did not. Hosea goes on to explain,

According to their pasture, so were they filled; they were filled and their heart was exalted; therefore have they forgotten me.[\[4\]](#)

In other words, their prosperity caused them to forget their Maker. Has America's prosperity caused her to forget God like the empires before her did? Will her supposed religiosity and military defense system prove as useless as Judah's and Israel's of old did? Obadiah says something similar,

The pride of your heart has deceived you, you that dwell in the clefts of the rock, whose habitation is high (like the skyscrapers in New York City); that say in his heart, Who shall bring me down to the ground? Though you exalt thyself as the eagle, and though you set your nest among the stars, thence will I bring you down, says the Lord. [\[5\]](#)

On America's first lunar landing the landing ship was called the *Eagle*. NASA announced, "The *Eagle* has landed," when the first landing occurred on the moon. America has surely put her nest among the stars.

As you have done, it shall be done unto you: your reward shall return upon your own head. [\[6\]](#)

As America has caused war and destruction upon the nations of Vietnam, Iraq, Libya, and Afghanistan, among others, will she experience the same destruction upon her own land? Finally Jeremiah gives a similar warning.

But if they will not obey, I will utterly pluck up and destroy that nation, saith the Lord. [\[7\]](#)

Are we as a nation being obedient to the voice of the Lord? Or have we hardened our hearts to accept the politically correct and legally right doctrines of men to our own destruction?

Notes:

[1] [Psalm 9:17](#)

[2] [Proverbs 14:34](#)

[3] [Hosea 8:14](#)

- [4] [Hosea 13:6](#)
- [5] [Obadiah 1:3-4](#)
- [6] [Obadiah 1:15](#)
- [7] [Jeremiah 12:17](#)

Chapter 34

Consequence, Consequences and More Consequences!

The **Bible** from its very first pages is a history of consequences. The decisions we make, the behavior we exhibit, have consequences. Adam and Eve paid the consequences for their decision in the Garden of Eden, and mankind continues to suffer as a result of those consequences. Ancient man also paid consequences for his decisions and behavior. The **Bible** tells us

And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. And it repented the Lord that He had made man on the earth, and it grieved Him at His heart.[\[1\]](#) The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence.[\[2\]](#)

God therefore decided to

bring a flood of waters upon the earth, to destroy all flesh, wherein is the breath of life, from under heaven; and everything that is in the earth shall die.[\[3\]](#)

As a result of that worldwide Flood we find massive fossil graveyards all around the world. Fossils formed in sedimentary rock laid down by flood waters all around globe are a testimony to the fact that a Global Flood without precedent occurred. They are a testimony to the consequences of man's refusal to acknowledge God in his understanding. Apostle Peter tells us,

For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the Word of God the heavens were of old ... whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water perished.[\[4\]](#)

Modern man has all but removed the idea of a great worldwide Flood from his understanding, because he does not want to believe in consequences. From the time of James Hutton in 1780's, to his disciple Charles Lyle in the 1830's, science has tried to eliminate the idea of a world-wide Flood from geology and has accepted "*millions of years.*" Why? Because modern man wants to be "free" to live a life without moral restraints. Apostle Peter says earlier in the same chapter,

Knowing this first, that there shall come in the Last Days scoffers, walking after their own lusts.[\[5\]](#)

Aldous Huxley, the grandson of Thomas Huxley, who was called "Darwin's Bulldog" for his avid defense of Darwin's theory, candidly admitted the following,

I had motives for not wanting the world to have meaning, consequently assumed it had none, and was able without any difficulty to find satisfying reasons for this assumption. The philosopher who finds no meaning in the world (and this is what evolution really teaches) is not concerned exclusively with a problem in pure metaphysics; he is also concerned to prove there is no valid reason why he personally should not do as he wants to do (moral liberty is the goal, to be free from religion's confines). For myself, as no doubt for most of my contemporaries, the philosophy of meaninglessness was essentially an instrument of liberation. The liberation we desired was simultaneously liberation from a certain political and economic system and liberation from a certain system of morality. We objected to the morality because it interfered with our sexual freedom.[\[6\]](#)

Apostle Paul, much like Peter, said the following:

For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away

their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.[\[7\]](#)

Wikipedia defines “*itching ears*” in the following way:

Itching ears is a term used in the Bible to describe individuals who seek out messages and doctrines that condones their own lifestyle, as opposed to adhering to the teachings of the Apostles.[\[8\]](#)

Man wants a world without consequences, so he can do what he wants. But the **Bible** teaches from the very first book that life is full of consequences. Rather than follow God, man accepts the theory of evolution, the modern origin’s fable, because he does not want God in his consciousness. Believing in evolution frees man from religion’s moral constraints, so he can live his life to the full, or so he thinks. But Apostle Paul warns,

And with all deceivableness and unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned (which means in this case judged) who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.[\[9\]](#)

So we see Aldous Huxley’s honest confession confirms what was spoken by the Apostles. Because we do not want to follow God’s loving voice, but rather our own selfish desires, we reject God’s restraints and do as we will. But as a result, we end up believing a lie. The reason we do not want to follow God is because we confuse Him with the false religious system that speaks in His name. We confuse religion with god, but as one Christian activist said,

True Christianity is about as far from much of today’s religious system as capitalism is from communism.

After the Flood the next important event is the dividing into different language groups at the Tower of Babel. Mankind refused to follow God's suggestion and scatter throughout the earth. Instead men began their own building project. They constructed a skyscraper and formed their own religion. As consequences for not doing as the Lord suggested, God divides the languages and mankind is forced to scatter to the four corners of the earth.[\[10\]](#)

A few generations later around 2,000 BC, because of his good decisions and behavior, God blesses Abraham. God says,

For I know him, that he will command his children and his household after him, and they shall keep the way of the Lord, to do justice and judgment; that the Lord may bring upon Abraham that which He has spoken of him.[\[11\]](#)

It was not just because Abraham believed, but because his beliefs caused him to be just and make righteous judgments. God decides to reveal to him the judgment that will be wrecked upon Sodom and Gomorrah as a consequence of the decisions and behavior of its population. And the Lord said,

Because the cry of Sodom and Gomorrah is great, and because their sin is very grievous; I will go down now, and see whether they have done altogether according to the cry of it, which is come unto Me: and if not, I will know.[\[12\]](#)

Then Abraham has his famous discussion with the Lord, where he says,

Shall not the Judge of all the earth do right?[\[13\]](#)

Abraham argues that it would be unjust for God to condemn the innocent with the guilty and so asks God to withhold His judgment if He can find 50 righteous people within the city. God agrees. Abraham persists until he has God agree not to condemn the city if there are but ten righteous people.[\[14\]](#)

Lot, Abraham's nephew, has been living in Sodom as a judge. He is warned by the angels to flee before the destruction comes. Lot goes and pleads with his married daughters and sons-in-law to forsake the city and live. But they won't listen to him, and he barely escapes by the persistence of the angels with his two younger daughters and wife. The wife also seemed to have a hard time leaving Sodom and all its luxuries and looks back during its destruction which the angels had specifically commanded them not to do. As a consequence she is turned into a pillar of salt.^[15]

But Abraham chooses God. He chooses to do justice and judgment. He chooses doing right above material riches. Therefore, God enters into a relationship with him. Thus begins the history of the descendants of Abraham. It's a beautiful history which is told in the book of *Genesis* in the *Bible*.

Notes:

- [1] [Genesis 6:5-6](#)
- [2] [Genesis 6:11](#)
- [3] [Genesis 6:17](#)
- [4] [2Peter 3:5-6](#)
- [5] [2Peter 3:3](#)
- [6] <https://www.apologeticspress.org/APContent.aspx?category=9&article=680&topic=94> (accessed 03/2016)
- [7] [2Timothy 4:3-4](#)
- [8] http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Itching_ears (accessed 03/2016)
- [9] [2Thessalonians 2:10-12](#)
- [10] [Genesis 11:1-9](#)
- [11] [Genesis 18:19](#)
- [12] [Genesis 18:21-22](#)
- [13] [Genesis 18:25](#)
- [14] [Genesis 18:26-33](#)
- [15] [Genesis 19:12-26](#)

Chapter 35

Blessing or Curse – Which Will You Have?

The important aspect though of the history of Abraham is his obedience to God, which brought down God's blessing upon him.

And the Lord said, That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; ...And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou has obeyed my voice.[\[1\]](#)

Afterward, Abraham's great-grandson Joseph gets sold into slavery by his jealous brothers, and the seventy-five descendants of Abraham wind up in Egypt. First they are guests of Pharaoh, but after the memory of Joseph and all the good that he did for the land of Egypt is forgotten, Abraham's descendants are forced into slavery. They learn the ways of the Egyptians and turn from the Lord to the god's of the Egyptians. But in their affliction of slavery they cry unto the Lord for a deliverer, and God sends them Moses, a man who chooses God instead of the riches of Egypt.

With God's blessing upon him because of his obedience, Moses leads the descendants of Abraham out of Egypt into the Promised Land. Reading through the books of *Exodus* and *Numbers* you can see all the problems Moses and God had with the Israelite people. On various occasions God wants to blot them out of existence, but Moses intercedes on their behalf and God hearkens unto him. Moses also himself gets so angry with the rebellious people that he loses his temper, and as a consequence God doesn't allow him to enter the Promised Land.

Before his death on Mount Nebo overlooking the Jordan Valley where the Children of Israel would enter the Promised Land, Moses gives his last warning to the people.

But it shall come to pass, if thou wilt not hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe to do all His commandments which I command thee this day; that all these curses shall come upon thee, and overtake thee. [\[2\]](#)

And thou shall become an astonishment, a proverb, and a byword, among all nations whither the Lord shall lead thee. [\[3\]](#) *Because thou served not the Lord thy God with joyfulness, and with gladness of heart.* [\[4\]](#)

I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live: that thou may love the Lord thy God, and that thou may obey His voice, and that thou may cleave unto Him: for He is thy life, and the length of days: that thou may dwell in the land which the Lord swore unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac and to Jacob, to give them. [\[5\]](#)

And the Lord said unto Moses, Behold, thou shall sleep with thy fathers; and this people will rise up, and go a-whoring after gods of the strangers of the land, whither they go to be among them, and will forsake Me, and break My covenant which I have made with them. Then My anger shall be kindled against them in that day, and I will forsake them, and I will hide My face from them, and they shall be devoured, and many evils and troubles shall befall them; so that they will say in that day, Are not these evils come upon us, because our God is not among us? And I will surely hide My face in that day for all the evils which they shall have wrought, in that they are turned unto other gods. Now therefore write ye this song for you, and teach it the children of Israel: put it in their mouths, that this song may be a witness for Me against the children of Israel. [\[6\]](#)

Moses therefore wrote this song the same day, and taught it the children of Israel.[7] And it came to pass, when Moses had made an end of writing the words of this Law in a book, until they were finished, that Moses commanded the Levites, saying, Take this book of the Law, and put it in the side of the Ark of the Covenant of the Lord your God, that it may be there for a witness against thee.[8]

For I know that after my death ye will utterly corrupt yourselves, and turn aside from the way which I have commanded you; and evil will befall you in the Latter Days; because ye will do evil in the sight of the Lord, to provoke Him to anger through the work of your hands.[9]

We must face the consequences of our behavior both as individuals and as nations. Eventually the Children of Israel enter the Promised Land, with Joshua leading the way, and they begin the quest of the pagan nations inhabiting the land. As long as they are obedient to the Lord, God blesses them. But when they are disobedient, God brings them under oppression by the nations surrounding them.

Finally, they desire a king over them, and reluctantly God yields to their request. Under Saul (1020-1000 BC), David (1000-970 BC), and Solomon (970-930 BC) they become a rich little kingdom. Insomuch that the **Bible** says,

So King Solomon exceeded all the kings of the earth for riches and for wisdom. And all the earth sought to Solomon, to hear his wisdom, which God had put in his heart.[10]

Notes:

[1] [Genesis 22:17-18](#)

[2] [Deuteronomy 28:15](#)

[3] [Deuteronomy 28:37](#)

[4] [Deuteronomy 28:47](#)

- [5] [Deuteronomy 30:19-20](#)
- [6] [Deuteronomy 31:16-19](#)
- [7] [Deuteronomy 31:22](#)
- [8] [Deuteronomy 31:24-26](#)
- [9] [Deuteronomy 31:29](#)
- [10] [1Kings 10:23-24](#)

Section Four: More Evidence and Argument

Chapter 36

The Divided Kingdom

But King Solomon loved many foreign women, together with the daughter of Pharaoh, woman of the Moabites, Ammonites, Edomites, Zidonians, and Hittites; of the nations concerning which the Lord said unto the children of Israel, You shall not go in to them, neither shall they come in unto you: for surely they will turn away your heart after their gods: Solomon clave unto them in love... For it came to pass, when Solomon was old, that his wives turned his heart after other gods: and his heart was not perfect (obedient) with the Lord his God, as was the heart of David his father. And Solomon did evil in the sight of the Lord, and went not fully after the Lord as did David his father.[\[1\]](#)

Solomon built shrines and temples in Jerusalem in honor of the gods' of his foreign wives.

And the Lord was angry with Solomon because his heart turned from the Lord God of Israel, which had appeared unto him twice, and had commanded him concerning this thing, that he should not go after other gods: but he kept not that which the Lord commanded. Wherefore the Lord said unto Solomon, Forasmuch as this is done of thee, and thou has not kept My covenant and My statutes, I will surely rend the kingdom from thee, and will give it to thy servant.[\[2\]](#)

On Solomon's death, his son becomes king. However, the ten northern tribes rebel and choose the son of Solomon's former servant to be their king. Sad to say, both Solomon's son who

reigns over the southern tribes of Judah and Benjamin, and the new king of the ten northern tribes of Israel do not turn unto the Lord, but lead both Israel and Judah further astray. Of the new king over the northern ten tribes the **Bible** says,

After this thing Jeroboam returned not from his evil way but made again of the lowest of the people priests of the high places (of the shrines on the hilltops): whosoever would, he consecrated him, and he became one of the priest of the high places.[\[3\]](#)

Jeroboam had started his own new religion to try to keep the people from going to Jerusalem each year for the various religious feasts. He needed priests, and those people obedient unto the Lord would not cooperate, so he took anyone who wanted the job. That's not a good way to recruit religious leaders. And the Lord said of him that he

has done evil above all that were before thee: for thou hast gone and made thee other gods, and molten images, to provoke Me to anger, and hast cast Me behind thy back.[\[4\]](#)

The reign of Solomon's son was not much better.

And Judah did evil in the sight of the Lord, and they provoked Him to jealousy with their sins which they committed, above all that their fathers had done, For they also built them high places, and images, and groves, on every high hill, and under every green tree. And there were also sodomites in the land: and they did according to all the abominations of the nations which the Lord cast out before the children of Israel.[\[5\]](#)

That's the **Bible** whether it's what you want to hear or not. Has America abandoned the one true God of Christianity which caused her to be blessed and turned spiritually unto other gods that be not gods?

Notes:

- [1] [1Kings 11:1-6](#)
- [2] [1Kings 11:9-11](#)
- [3] [1Kings 13:33](#)
- [4] [1Kings 14:9](#)
- [5] [1Kings 14:22-24](#)

Chapter 37

We Are Sisters, We Are Harlots, and We Are Not Ashamed!

The book of *Revelation* is not the first time we see God using the symbolism of a harlot to try to make a point. Through Jeremiah He calls Israel, the northern kingdom, and Judah, the southern kingdom, harlots. He also calls each of them “*an adulterous wife*.” God tells the prophet Hosea to marry a harlot to try to get the point across that He is married to us and will forgive us if we change and come back to Him with all our heart, mind and strength. Here we read from *Jeremiah*:

The LORD said also unto me in the days of Josiah the king, Have you seen that which backsliding Israel (the northern kingdom) hath done? She is gone up upon every high mountain and under every green tree, and there hath played the harlot. And I said after she had done all these things, Turn thou unto Me. But she returned not. And her treacherous sister Judah (the southern kingdom) saw it. And I saw, when for all the causes whereby backsliding Israel committed adultery I had put her away, and given her a bill of divorce; yet her treacherous sister Judah feared not, but went and played the harlot also. And it came to pass through the lightness of her whoredom, that she defiled the land, and committed adultery with stones and with stocks. And yet for all this her treacherous sister Judah hath not turned unto Me with her whole heart, but feignedly, says the LORD. And the LORD said unto me, The backsliding Israel hath justified herself more than treacherous Judah.[\[1\]](#)

God was warning the southern Kingdom of Judah to not follow the way of the northern Kingdom of Israel. But even

though Judah had seen what had happened to the Kingdom of Israel, she continued in her spiritual adultery. In ***Hosea*** we read:

Hear the Word of the LORD, ye children of Israel: for the LORD hath a controversy with the inhabitants of the land, because there is no truth, nor mercy, nor knowledge of God in the land. By swearing, and lying, and killing, and stealing, and committing adultery, they break out, and blood touches blood.[\[2\]](#)

God Himself compares the divided kingdom of Israel and Judah unto two harlot sisters. Even though Judah gets to observe the fate of the northern tribes of Israel and their destruction under the Assyrian Empire, she refuses to change her ways but rather follows Israel's bad example. The ***Bible*** shows us the parallel history of these two kingdoms, the northern ten tribes called Israel and the southern two tribes called Judah.

The northern ten tribes quickly forsake the true God of Abraham. They adopt Jeroboam's new religious system and soon lose the blessing of God. Without God's protection, they are defeated and conquered by the Assyrian Empire and taken away captive. In 722 BC, their capital city Samaria is destroyed. The Northern Kingdom has around a 300-year existence from the time of Saul. Other peoples are brought in to occupy the land. You can read it below:

Then the king of Assyria came up throughout all the land, and went up to Samaria, and besieged it three years. In the ninth year of Hoshea the king of Assyria took Samaria, and carried Israel away into Assyria, and placed them in Halah and in Habor by the river of Gozan, and in the cities of the Medes.

For so it was, that the children of Israel had sinned against the LORD their God, which had brought them up out of the land of Egypt, from under the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt, and had feared other gods, And walked in

the statutes of the heathen, whom the LORD cast out from before the children of Israel, and of the kings of Israel, which they had made. And the children of Israel did secretly those things that were not right against the LORD their God, and they built them high places in all their cities, from the tower of the watchmen to the fenced city.

And they set them up images and groves in every high hill, and under every green tree: And there they burnt incense in all the high places, as did the heathen whom the LORD carried away before them; and wrought wicked things to provoke the LORD to anger: For they served idols, whereof the LORD had said unto them, Ye shall not do this thing.

Yet the LORD testified against Israel, and against Judah, by all the prophets, and by all the seers, saying, Turn ye from your evil ways, and keep My commandments and My statutes, according to all the Law which I commanded your fathers, and which I sent to you by My servants the prophets. [\[3\]](#)

Notwithstanding they would not hear, but hardened their necks, like to the neck of their fathers, that did not believe in the Lord their God. And they rejected His statues, and His covenant that He made with their fathers, and His testimonies which He testified against them; and they followed vanity, and became vain, and went after the heathen that were round about them, concerning whom the Lord had charged them, that they should not do like them.

And they left all the commandments of the Lord their God, and made them molten images, even two calves, and made a grove, and worshipped all the host of heaven, and served Baal. And they caused their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire, and used divination and enchantments, and sold themselves to do evil in the sight of the Lord, to

provoke Him to anger. Therefore the Lord was very angry with Israel, and removed them out of His sight: there was none left but the tribe of Judah only.[\[4\]](#)

The southern kingdom of Judah fairs somewhat better, depending on its kings and their obedience unto the Lord. They have several revivals and great repentances. Under the good King Jehoshaphat, the **Bible** notes,

And the remnant of the sodomites, which remained in the days of his father Asa, he (Jehoshaphat) took out of the land.[\[5\]](#)

Even though sodomy is today politically correct and the US Supreme Court has made gay marriage legal in all states, is it Biblically correct? As much as I respect the people I know who are homo-sexual, I cannot condone the behavior, no matter how many laws are made in its defense. Why? Because there is a higher law speaking to me from God's Word and from the voice of conscience that tells me that such behavior is morally incorrect. Biologically it just doesn't fit either. A nut and a bolt fit together, but two bolts don't. In **Isaiah** we read,

Woe unto them that decree unrighteous decrees.[\[6\]](#) *For the leaders of this people cause them to err.*[\[7\]](#)

The **Bible** does not condone sodomy. Just as the many other moral restraints are placed in the **Bible** because of mankind's tendency to sin, so is God's Word equivocal on this matter. I will treat homosexuals lovingly and respectfully. But I cannot condone their behavior and neither does God's Word.

Sodomy had been politically correct under Jehoshaphat's father Asa. However, because King Jehoshaphat wants to serve God rather than man, he has the sodomites removed from the land. However his son, Manasseh, who reigned after him in Jerusalem,

did that which was evil in the sight of the Lord, after the abominations of the heathen, whom the Lord cast out before the children of Israel.[\[7\]](#)

Manasseh builds up again the high places which his good father had destroyed and the altars to Baal,

and worshipped all the host of heaven and served them.[\[8\]](#) ***And he built altars for all the host of heaven in the two courts of the house of the Lord. And he made his sons pass through the fire, and observed times, and used enchantments, and dealt with familiar spirits and wizards: he wrought much wickedness in the sight of the Lord, to provoke Him to anger.***[\[9\]](#)

I need to make a short aside and comment on the above verse. Many people do not seem to understand that much of the New Age Movement fits squarely into the section of ***“used enchantments and dealt with familiar spirits.”*** Ravi Zacharias, Caryl Matrisciana and Johanna Michaelsen are a few of the authors who have written and spoken extensively on Eastern philosophies and the occult and their influence on the West. Both Zacharias and Matrisciana have backgrounds from India. Michaelsen was involved in the occult medical practices in Mexico. In her book [*The Beautiful Side of Evil*](#) [\[10\]](#) she gives clear warning of the dangers of the occult and how easy it is to be deceived, but how difficult it is to realize that one has been deceived.

Michaelson, quoting Dr. Hobart Freeman says,

One of the greatest distinctions between the religion of Israel and heathen religions [was that the heathen] sought to discover truth by means of divination and sorcery.[\[11\]](#)

Having lived most of her childhood in India and later being captivated by the Indian mystical influence when she returned to the West in the sixties, Caryl Matrisciana knows all too well the

drawing power of Indian mysticism found in Buddhism, yoga, and the different Hindu gurus. In her book, [*Out of India: A true story about the New Age Movement*](#)^[12], Matrisciana exposes from her personal experience the truth about the Hindu influence in Western spirituality. She writes,

Just as bank tellers steadily become more familiar with money, so we need to steadily become more familiar with the Bible. And, because of the increasingly cunning deceptions of Satan, we need to become more familiar with the whole counsel of God...His Word is our best defense against the tsunamis of deception beating upon the world and the church.^[13]

Intellectual and apologetic speaker and writer Dr. Ravi Zacharias is a powerful voice in helping us to discern the truth in the modern age. Having been born and having lived the first eighteen years of his life in India, Dr. Zacharias has a keen understanding of the Eastern mind. In his books [*Jesus among other Gods*](#)^[14] and [*Why Jesus?*](#)^[15] he reveals how and why the Western mind is attracted to Eastern mysticism. The New Age ideas are usually presented in pseudo-scientific terminology, which gives them an aura of authority to the Western mind. Dr. Zacharias accurately analyzes the influence of eastern mysticism and its deceptive “truths.” We read from his book,

Being born into a Christian home does not make one a Christian; it is the specific decision on the part of every person to follow Christ that makes a person a Christian...I became a Christian on the bed of attempted suicide at the age of seventeen when I cried out to God in prayer, “Lord Jesus, if you are who you claim to be, reveal yourself to me and take me out of my desperate situation and I will leave no stone unturned in my pursuit of truth.” Five days later I walked out of that hospital room a brand-new man, and I have never looked back.^[16]

Both Reiki and Spirit Science fall into the New Age philosophies and in old Biblical terminology would be considered channeling or dealing with familiar spirits. My own article on the subject I will include in the next chapter of this book. Now we will return to the history of the kings of Judah.

And Manasseh seduced them to do more evil than did the nations whom the Lord destroyed before the children of Israel.[\[17\]](#) Moreover Manasseh shed innocent blood very much, till he had filled Jerusalem from one end to another; besides his sin wherewith he made Judah to sin, in doing that which was evil in the sight of the Lord.[\[18\]](#)

Is the innocent blood which the Lord is talking about the children that were offered in child sacrifice? The Lord through Jeremiah the prophet condemns Judah saying,

Also in thy skirts is found the blood of the poor innocents: I have not found it by secret search, but upon all these.[\[19\]](#)

In other words, the killing of the poor innocents was something that was done openly; the Lord did not need to make a secret search. The Lord said,

They have built the high places..., to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire; which I commanded them not, neither came it into My heart.[\[20\]](#)

Isaiah prophesied years before,

Their feet run to do evil, and they make haste to shed innocent blood.[\[21\]](#)

In the *Psalms* we find,

Shall the throne of iniquity have fellowship with you, which frame mischief by a law? They gather themselves

together against the soul of the righteous, and condemn the innocent blood.[\[22\]](#)

Manasseh and other kings made it legal to shed the innocent blood in child sacrifice. Hitler in Nazi Germany made it legal to kill Jews because they were according to his bias non-persons. Hitler believed the Jews to be a race in the evolutionary scale between monkey and man. Today our government makes laws to permit abortion. We build abortion clinics and promote day-after pills. Are we condemning the innocent blood? What blood could be more innocent than that of an unborn child? Is God happy with our behavior and the laws we have made? Will we suffer the consequences? Even if the law says it's all right, does that make it right in God's eyes, the higher law? Are our political, medical, educational, judicial, industrial leaders leading us astray?

At the end of the WWII, at the Nuremberg trials, some of the former Nazi leaders tried to use the fact that they were only following orders to escape prosecution and execution. They claimed that since the Jews were legally non-persons in Germany they had done nothing legally wrong. Utilitarianism, or the idea that whatever the society decides at the moment is right is therefore right, had given the German people their new moral rules. Therefore, since the German law said that the Jew was not a legal person, how could the German soldiers be condemned? They were only following orders. The judges contested that a "higher law" existed, and their actions had infringed upon that "higher law."[\[23\]](#)

Are we today as nations infringing upon those "higher laws?" Will we meet the same fate as Hitler's leaders when we face the Higher Law-Giver?

Notes:

[1] [Jeremiah 3:6-11](#)

[2] [Hosea 4:1-2](#)

- [3] [2Kings 17:5-13](#)
- [4] [2Kings 17:15-18](#)
- [5] [1Kings 22:46](#)
- [6] Isaiah 10:1
- [7] [2Kings 21:2](#)
- [8] [2Kings 21:3](#)
- [9] [2Kings 21:5-6](#)
- [10] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=K6Qy1j2LBmU>
- [11] Johanna Michaelson, *The Beautiful Side of Evil*, Harvest House Publishers, Oregon, 1982, pg. 200; cited from Hobart Freeman, *An Introduction to the Old Testament Prophets*, Moody Press, Chicago, 1968, pg.110.
- [12] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VZ-cADNmtiY>
- [13] Caryl Matrisciana, *Out of India: a true story about the New Age movement*, Lighthouse Trails Publishing, Montana, 2008, pg. 220.
- [14] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=eaIBoARTGPk>
- [15] https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=xh_tLWsL3gA
- [16] Ravi Xacharias, *Why Jesus*, FaithWords, New York, 2012, pg. xvi & xvii.
- [17] [2Kings 21:9](#)
- [18] [2Kings 21:16](#)
- [19] [Jeremiah 2:34](#)
- [20] [Jeremiah 7:31](#)
- [21] [Isaiah 59:7](#)
- [22] [Psalm 94:20-21](#)
- [23] <http://www.wnd.com/2007/04/41028/>

Chapter 38

Reiki and the New Age Movement

I want to touch a little more on the subject of the New Age Religions including Reiki before going any further in our study.

One of the first promoters of the New Age Religion was none other than Mahatma Gandhi. Gandhi was well versed in the *New Testament* and quoted often from the words of Jesus. In his mixture of Hinduism and Christian thought, he developed his idea of political non-violence encouraging his followers to not offer physical resistance to government abuse, but to maintain a pacifistic position. Quoting from the Sermon on the Mount, he said,

Resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on the right cheek, turn to him the other also.[\[1\]](#)

Asked if he admired Jesus Christ so much, why did he not become a Christian? Gandhi replied, he would become a Christian if he ever met a real follower of the words of Christ. George Bernard Shaw, the Irish playwright and winner of the Nobel Prize for Literature, was paraphrased to have said something similar:

Christianity might be a good thing if anyone ever tried it.[\[2\]](#)

The mixture of Christianity with Eastern religions became quite popular in the 1960s. The *Beatles* trip to India, leading to George Harrison's conversion to Hinduism, resulted in their influencing their generation with Eastern ideas. Many of their songs like [My Sweet Lord](#) promoted Eastern religious concepts. The Christian West enjoyed *My Sweet Lord* thinking it was dedicated to Jesus Christ. In reality the song was to Lord Krishna and incorporated the words Hare-Krishna. Those words later became a familiar sound by the Hare-Krishna who were known for their continual chanting as they walked through the streets and parks looking for new converts. In fact the Krishna are expected

to chant Hare-Krishna at least two hours a day as a way of connecting with the Hindu god Krishna.

We need to understand that the Eastern idea of reality, their world view, is totally different to the Western Christian idea. In the Eastern world view, man is captured by his karma in a continual cycle of death and rebirth. Man is doomed to be born again and suffer another life if he cannot improve his karma. Only by connecting with the universal life force or energy can man overcome his bad karma and be released back into the cosmic energy and find his “salvation.” This is usually accomplished through the help of a guru or spiritual guide. One’s ultimate salvation is in the re-uniting with the universal energy or spirit with the complete death of self.

There is no personal entity in the Eastern world view of salvation or nirvana, but rather the reuniting of your spirit-energy with the great spirit-energy of the universe. Therefore, everything becomes God or part of God, you, me, the trees, the animals, everything is God. The Eastern world view also has no concept of sin. Man is born in ignorance and has to be illuminated. Those who have been enlightened and overcome karma are the gurus who teach others how they too can overcome their karma.

In the Judeo-Christian world view, man was made by God in a perfect state and had perfect fellowship with God. Man fell from that state through disobedience to God having been deceived by Satan, a rebellious angel. God promised a way of salvation and reconnection with Him. His promised Redeemer would defeat Satan and open the way to restore man’s broken relationship with God. God later chose Abraham as the father of faith through whom He passed His laws and commandments. God knew Abraham would faithfully teach his children after him, as we have read earlier.

For I know him (Abraham) that he will command his children and his household after him, and they shall keep

the way of the Lord, to do justice and judgment; that the Lord may bring upon Abraham that which He has spoken of him.[\[3\]](#)

As a result we have the *Old Testament*, with hundreds of specific prophecies foretelling of the life of the Redeemer who was to come. The prophecies were fulfilled in Christ, who Paul rightly explains is the way of salvation. In the Judeo-Christian worldview of death we are given once to die, but after that the judgment.[\[4\]](#) There is no continual cycle of birth, death and rebirth. One does not lose his identity in death but faces judgment with reward or due punishment. Only through the accepting of God's own sacrifice for sin, in His coming into the world and dying for man's sin on the cross, can death be defeated and the way of salvation found. Salvation is a gift of God offered to us by God's own sacrificial death on the cross.[\[5\]](#) Satan and death are defeated and the way of salvation is offered to as many as will receive it.[\[6\]](#)

But in today's New Age generation, we find man rejecting Christ's position as the Redeemer. Man would rather accept Christ merely as an enlightened one, like the Buddha, Mohammed, or Confucius. To the New Ager, Christ did not really rise from the dead. Christianity, therefore, becomes merely *one* of the ways of salvation, and Jesus a mid-Eastern guru showing *a path* to salvation, a path similar to any of the other paths found in any other religion. Jesus becomes a great moral or spiritual leader or guru and nothing more. Salvation can then be found within many of the differing religious faiths or philosophies.

However, commenting upon the above idea, C.S. Lewis, the famous prolific Irish writer and scholar known for his 'Chronicles of Narnia' fantasy series and his pro-Christian radio broadcasts and books, said the following:

I am trying here to prevent anyone saying the really foolish thing that people often say about Him: I'm ready to accept Jesus as a great moral teacher, but I don't accept his claim to be God. That is the one thing we must not say.

A man who was merely a man and said the sort of things Jesus said would not be a great moral teacher. He would either be a lunatic — on the level with the man who says he is a poached egg — or else he would be the Devil of Hell. You must make your choice. Either this man was, and is, the Son of God, or else a madman or something worse. You can shut him up for a fool, you can spit at him and kill him as a demon or you can fall at his feet and call him Lord and God, but let us not come with any patronizing nonsense about his being a great human teacher. He has not left that open to us. He did not intend to.[\[7\]](#)

We either accept Jesus as Lord, or deny the truth of the Gospel and walk in darkness. When Jesus' disciples asked Him what would be the sign of His coming and of the end of the world, Jesus warned them that many would be deceived. He said,

Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in My name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.[\[8\]](#)

A few breaths later He repeats Himself and says,

And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.[\[9\]](#)

And then a little later when talking of the Great Tribulation that shall be upon all the world, He says,

For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible they shall deceive the very elect.[\[10\]](#)

Of course the “elect” that Jesus is talking about here is the same “elect” found throughout the *New Testament* and comes from the Greek word “eklektos” which means “called out ones,” or “separated ones.” The Latin “ecclesia” comes from the same word and is translated in our *Bibles* as “the Church,” which means the saved Christians, the true believers in Christ, and is not

a reference to a building. Not one time in the *New Testament* does the word “elect” point to or indicate any other group of people than the newly saved believing Christians. Not once does it refer to a special group of Jewish believers, but is always synonymous with the new Christian Church of believers whether formerly Jewish, Greek or Roman.

Apostle Paul himself warned that in the “Latter Days” men would seek to the occult for spirituality,

Now the spirit speaks expressly, that in the Latter Times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.[\[11\]](#)

He also warns that Satan comes with

power and signs and lying wonders and because they received not the love of the truth, for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie.[\[12\]](#)

Satan can indeed do signs, healings, and even give us a feeling of peace in order to deceive us. God will let us be deceived if deception is what we prefer. However, we do not need to be deceived, because as Paul says, in Christ is

hid all the treasure of wisdom and knowledge (of God). And this I say lest any man should beguile you with enticing words.[\[13\]](#)

In other words, we do not need to look elsewhere for some new hidden wisdom, even if it all sounds good, because all the treasure of wisdom and knowledge is in Christ! Nevertheless, Paul warns,

But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ. For if he that comes preaches another Jesus, whom we have not preached, or if ye receive another spirit, which you have not received, or

another gospel, which you have not accepted, (why do you willingly listen)?[\[14\]](#)

It seems mankind is very easily tempted by his need for experiencing God with his feelings that he looks elsewhere. But the problem is that our spiritual Enemy, the Enemy of our soul, is seeking to destroy us through deception. Paul writes,

And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore, it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness.[\[15\]](#)

He warns us that we should not fall for the deception. We should be smarter.

Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices.[\[16\]](#)

Jesus said He is the true light. He said,

I am the light of the world. He that follows Me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of light.[\[17\]](#)

But the trouble is that

men love darkness rather than light because their deeds are evil.[\[18\]](#)

Jesus also said,

I am the way, the truth and the life.[\[19\]](#)

He said that

if (we) continue in (His) Word then (we would be His) disciples indeed, and (we would) know the truth and the truth would set (us) free.[\[20\]](#)

When He prayed to the Father for His disciples He said,

Sanctify them through Your truth; Your Word is truth.[\[21\]](#)

But He also warned that we could be deceived. He said,

If therefore the light that is in you is darkness, how great is that darkness. [\[22\]](#)

God has warned us in His Word that we should not be deceived by another gospel. [\[23\]](#) Reiki claims to be teaching us a method for healing and spiritual strength that was lost but rediscovered sometime recently in Japan. Reiki presents itself as a non-religious healing or stress relief technique open to all people of faith or of no faith. By using pseudo-scientific and metaphysical-sounding terms, the Westerner is captivated by its offers of healing and stress relief. It is even clothed in some very Christian-like terms and concepts. But when we look at Reiki closely we see it is indeed a spiritual practice with the calling upon spiritual entities or “angels” for direction and help ultimately ending in the person having what the ***Bible*** calls “a familiar spirit” or spirit guide.

Such practices have been condemned in God’s Word since the times of Moses. The Lord said,

When you are come into the land which the Lord your God gives you, you shall not learn to do after the abominations of those nations. There shall not be found among you any one that makes his son or his daughter to pass through the fire, or that uses divination, or an observer of times, or an enchanter, or a witch, or a charmer, or a consulter with familiar spirits, or a wizard, or a necromancer. For all that do these things are an abomination unto the Lord: and because of these abominations the Lord your God does drive them out from before you. You shall be perfect (in obedience) with the Lord your God. For these nations, which you shall possess, hearkened unto observers of times, and unto diviners: but as for you, the Lord your God has not suffered you so to do. [\[24\]](#)

Former occultist and Meditation teacher, Valter Ohman, from Sweden, said after his conversion to Christianity:

If mediation is not thoroughly Christian, it leads to pagan communication with spirits. Meditation based on a false ideology brings people into contact with false spirits and a false god. The result is not liberation but oppression and possession.[25]

Isaiah warns us,

And when they shall say unto you, Seek unto them that have familiar spirits, and unto wizards that peep (whisper), and that mutter: should not a people seek unto their God?...To the word and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this Word, it is because there is no light in them.[26]

Jesus is

the true light, which lightens every man that comes into the world,

not Reiki.[27]

Please pray for those tempted by Reiki and other Eastern religious philosophies. Pray for the Reiki masters who may themselves be seeking for God. We are fighting a spiritual battle, therefore use the weapon of prayer, but also let every man speak the truth in love with his neighbor. God expects us who know the Word to speak up and with meekness instruct

those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; and that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the Devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.[28]

Notes:

[1] [Matthew 5:39](#)

- [2] <http://shawquotations.blogspot.pt/2014/09/christianity-might-be-good-thing-if.html> (accessed 03/2016)
- [3] [Genesis 18:19](#)
- [4] [Hebrews 9:27](#) And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment.
- [5] [Ephesians 2:8-9](#) For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: not of works, lest any man should boast.
- [6] [John 1:12](#) But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:
- [7] C.S. Lewis *Mere Christianity*. <http://www.goodreads.com/quotes/6979-i-am-trying-here-to-prevent-anyone-saying-the-really> (accessed 03/2016)
<http://www.churchleaders.com/pastors/free-resources-pastors/152257-free-ebook-mere-christianity.html> e-book download (03/2016)
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TwgLVJyZryA> áudio part one (03/16)
- [8] [Matthew 24:4-5](#)
- [9] [Matthew 24:11](#)
- [10] [Matthew 24:24](#)
- [11] [1Timothy 4:1](#)
- [12] [2Thessolonians 2:9-11](#) Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie.
- [13] [Colossians 2:3-4](#)
- [14] [2Corinthians 11:3-4](#)
- [15] [2Corinthians 11:14-15](#)
- [16] [2Corinthians 2:11](#)
- [17] [John 8:12](#)
- [18] [John 3:19](#)
- [19] [John 14:6](#)
- [20] [John 8:32](#)
- [21] [John 17:17](#)
- [22] [Matthew 6:23](#)
- [23] [Galatians 1:8](#) But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.
- [24] [Deuteronomy 18:9-14](#)
- [25] Valter Ohman, as cited by G.J.O.Moshay, *Who is this Allah*, Dorchester House Publications, 1994, p.157.
- [26] [Isaiah 8:19-20](#)
- [27] [John 1:9](#)
- [28] [2Timothy 2:25-26](#)

Chapter 39

Letter to a Friend Involved with Reiki

Dear Friend,

It was interesting to talk to you. It makes me have to think to find answers to the questions you addressed. But I think we need to ask and answer the questions: Do all roads lead to truth? Is there only one way? Is there more than one way? Since God's Word says that all things work together for good to them that love God, I believe in our search for truth, we may go down different paths.

Jesus said,

They that hunger and thirst after righteousness shall be filled.[\[1\]](#)

In *Isaiah* we read,

Ye shall seek Me and find Me when ye shall search for Me with all your heart.[\[2\]](#)

Jesus' own words convey the same sentiment,

Seek and ye shall find.[\[3\]](#)

In my own personal experience, I rejected the God of Christianity, Christ and the organized religion of both Catholicism and Protestantism because of the hypocrisy and lack of spirituality that I saw in both of them. In my youth, I didn't meet one priest or minister against the war in Vietnam or against the military industrial complex. They were just part of the club and though they sympathized with my problem of having to go to war, they felt it was my duty to obey my government. Therefore, I searched in Buddhism, yoga, Transcendental Meditation, organic foods, fasting, and Judaism for the answers.

However, after reading and searching intensely on the subject of what I should do about the war, which none of the above answered, I finally found the words of Jesus in the Sermon on the Mount that said,

Ye have heard that it has been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: but I say unto you, that ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite you on the right cheek, turn to him the other, also,[\[4\]](#)

and later,

Ye have heard that it has been said, Thou shall love thy neighbor, and hate thy enemy. But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you and persecute you.[\[5\]](#)

The Early Christians suffered persecution under the Romans, but lived out their faith. They went to the lions and torturous deaths, and yet testified of their faith in Christ's doctrine of love. My stand against the military ultimately came from the following the words of Christ. Even before I experienced salvation's rebirth in Christ, I received moral strength from reading Jesus' words in the *New Testament*, where yoga, meditation, and fasting had failed me.

Since you agree that there are absolutes and therefore absolute truth exists, then we must look at the different religions and their truth claims to see which one or ones actually lead us to the truth. Oddly enough, almost all the religious ideologies claim to be the only way to salvation, or the best way to salvation, or the old and forgotten way to salvation, or the newly-found again way to salvation.

But since almost every one of the religions in the world make the same claim and contradict one another in their claims, they cannot all be true. They may all have truth. But even a lie is often coated in truth in order to deceive. If something is true, then something that contradicts it cannot be true. In other words, something cannot be true and false at the same time, unless you play word games. But unclear mystical concepts are very common in India where their meaning of "reality" is that 'reality' is an "illusion," and therefore, is not "real," which leads to an illogical contradiction or anti-logic. In math we say, if $y=3$ then

y cannot = not 3. “God is love” and “God is the absence of love” cannot both be true because they are contradictory.

The ***Bible*** says that Christ was crucified and rose bodily from the dead.[6] The ***Koran*** says that Jesus was not crucified but God let another person be substituted for Him. Therefore, there was no resurrection. The ***Bible*** and the ***Koran*** contradict one another. Both cannot be true. The statement that all religions basically teach the same thing, unconditional love, is not true. The ***Koran*** says we cannot really know God. Only by following the Five Pillars of Islam can a man have a chance of maybe gaining salvation upon death, unless he dies as a martyr in the cause of Islam. That is not to say that followers of Islam cannot be very loving people.

In my visit to the Saharawi refugees in southern Algeria, I met a very loving Muslim man. His love was almost beyond anything I ever experienced in Europe. But even though he was a loving and caring person that does not necessarily mean that the creed of Islam is true. The ***Bible*** says,

God is love; and he that dwells in love dwells in God, and God in him.[7]

I believe people like my Muslim friend who are really walking in love are close to God. Jesus said,

He that receives you, receives Me.[8]

I believe that although the circumstances made it hard for us to talk to him more intimately about Christ, by his receiving us so cordially, he was actually receiving Christ whom he knew we represented. In the same chapter where John says

God is love,[9]

he also says,

Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try (or prove) the spirits whether they are of God: because many false

prophets are gone out into the world. Hereby you know the Spirit of God: every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: and every spirit that does not confess that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is not of God, but is that spirit of antichrist.[\[10\]](#)

Are the spirits that people are channeling with in Reiki believers in Jesus Christ?

Jesus said,

I am the way, the truth and the life, no man comes unto the father, but by me.[\[11\]](#)

He said,

If the light that is in you is darkness and you believe it is light, then you're really in a great darkness.[\[12\]](#)

Apostle Paul said that even the Devil himself can appear as an angel of light.[\[13\]](#) Apostle John said that the “beast,” Satan’s man during the Last Days, would perform great signs and wonders so that the whole world would believe in him.[\[14\]](#)

From my experience and from reading the **Bible**, I am under the conviction that all the religions can be placed under two categories. The first are those that profess that one must obey certain rules, or do certain exercises, eat certain foods, etc, to be saved. The second are those who profess that man is incapable of saving himself and he needs a Savior. In the first group, we can put false Christianity or Churchianity or religiousity in whatever form or sect it appears, plus all the other “isms,” sects, and spiritual movements of both East and West which teach us that we can save ourselves through our own efforts whether they be meditating, calling upon certain spiritual entities, using certain signs, symbols, or rocks, eating or not eating certain foods, performing certain rituals, wearing certain symbols, chanting certain lines, etc. Though these ‘isms’ may contain some truth, they profess to be *the truth* in order to gain converts and disciples. But the truth is they are not “the truth.”

The truth is that man is not capable of saving himself by his own self righteous efforts. That is why the world is like it is today. The world needs a Savior. We long for a Savior. Not just some ethereal concept of salvation. The **Bible** says we are made in God's image.[\[15\]](#) Because of that we are able to think, communicate, use language, create and love. If God is just some "universal energy" or "life force" why should we have a conscience telling us the difference between right and wrong?

The belief in the Christian God of the **Bible** gives ample reasons for why we can love, reason, judge, create, think and feel. The **Bible** says God is love.[\[16\]](#) But it also says He's a consuming fire.[\[17\]](#) The **Bible** says that Jesus stands at the right hand of the Father [\[18\]](#) and that Jesus will judge the living and the dead.[\[19\]](#) When we die, we are not just reunited with the universal life force or energy; we are reunited with the Person of Christ, and with the departed saints who are surrounding us now like a great cloud of witnesses.[\[20\]](#)

It is not true that all the religions teach the same principle, unconditional love. The **Bible** does teach that God has an unconditional love for us. However, if we reject God's love for us, He will not overrule our free will. If other faiths teach something similar, it's like the example of the counterfeit bill. The counterfeit has to be pretty close to the real to pass off as the truth. Therefore, even false religious beliefs need to have some universal truths in their doctrines in order to be believed.

Jesus not only preached love, he lived and died in love for the sins of mankind, both you and me. We cannot save ourselves.[\[21\]](#) We need a Savior to cleanse us from our impurities. If we depend upon our own ability to cleanse ourselves, or the calling upon spirits or angels to do so, we will be found short. Only Christ alone can redeem sin, the only begotten Son of God. Our own righteous efforts cannot save us or keep us saved. It's Christ alone. The **Bible** says,

Not by works of righteousness which we have done but according to His mercy He saved us, by the washing of regeneration and the renewing of the Holy Spirit.[\[22\]](#)

No one else died for the sins of mankind and testified of the truth of His doctrine through the mighty miracles He did. His final resurrection from the dead confirmed His divinity. Death was swallowed up in victory. [\[23\]](#) Only Christ died and rose from the dead.[\[24\]](#) This is the foundation stone of Christianity. No other faith has such a firm foundation. The ***Bible*** also is a living book full of prophecies which Christ fulfilled. It is a book full with prophecies yet to be fulfilled.

I was young and energetic like you when I first experienced the love of God during a drug trip. At that epiphany experience I asked, “Is this is what Jesus was all about?” But since I did not know any real Christians, I looked elsewhere. The New Age Movement, which has only recently arrived in Portugal, had been made popular through the Beatles’ music. Eastern thought and Transcendental Meditation became the intellectual norm. I bought into it fully and filled my heart and mind with the popular New Age books of that era.

I meditated, did yoga, fasted, and ate organic food cooked only in a special way to gain my spirituality. But it was never enough. Even with all my effort it was never enough. I always came down from the high, got impatient, did something unloving, and became discouraged - especially with my inability to stay on that spiritual high. I couldn’t keep the spiritual high. I couldn’t maintain a state of righteousness. Thank God I found the truth was much simpler. I found true Christianity; I found the power of God’s Word, comfort of the Holy Spirit and the discernment and wisdom that knowing God’s Word gives. Jesus said,

My Word is truth.[\[25\]](#)

He said,

If you continue in My Word, then... you shall know the truth and the truth shall set you free.[\[26\]](#)

But He also warned that many would come in His name saying they were Christ and deceive many.[\[27\]](#) [\[28\]](#) Paul tells us there will be a great falling away first and then shall the man of sin be revealed,[\[29\]](#) the Antichrist. Paul also admonished that even the Devil himself can appear as an angel of light.[\[30\]](#) And Jesus warned that the false Messiahs would do great and mighty miracles,[\[31\]](#) so we know that the Devil and his fallen angels can and do inspire their human followers on earth in the Last Days to perform seeming miracles.[\[32\]](#) Many people will be deceived.

Jesus said the love of many would grow colder.[\[33\]](#) He said men's behavior would be similar to that of Sodom and Gomorrah[\[34\]](#) before its destruction. He said violence would increase and there would be wars, earthquakes and pestilences like Ebola and Aids, but that all these things were the beginning of sorrows and that things would get worse.[\[35\]](#) Mankind is indeed headed for some apocalyptic events that will shake the foundations of the world. Jesus said that unless He controlled and shortened the destruction mankind would cease to exist, that man would destroy himself.[\[36\]](#)

I believe Reiki is not the truth, but an imitation, a deception. The calling upon the angels of light is in fact the calling upon deceptive spirits who cannot fulfill their promises but are sent to confuse and disorient the truth-seeker and keep them from the real truth of the Gospel. I have read various testimonies of former Reiki Masters who have, after a sad journey through Reiki, finally found Christ. Some have sent out warnings to others.

I will end here, my friend, to not go on too long. But I will attach two links for you to view on the subject. [Catholic Leader Talks About REIKI](#)[\[37\]](#) and [Dangers of REIKI](#).[\[38\]](#) In my search for the truth, I eventually had no desire for those Eastern philosophies and exercises. The reason though was because I was full of the Word and had found the answers in my in depth study

of the Scriptures. Would you be interested in studying more from the *Bible*? Jesus said if you do,

the truth would set you free.[\[39\]](#)

Will you take up the challenge to “*continue in His Word?*”[\[40\]](#)

Let me know! (End of letter to a Reiki Master)

At this point I would like to apologize if some of the chapters repeat information discussed in previous chapters. Some chapters were written as independent items which I later thought worthwhile to include in the text. Rather than do a lot of editing, I have left them pretty much as they were. But hopefully by repeating the same information, it will make it easier for you to remember.

Notes:

[1] [Matthew 5:6](#)

[2] [Jeremiah 29:13](#)

[3] [Matthew 7:7](#) Ask, and it shall be given unto you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

[4] [Matthew 5:38-39](#)

[5] [Matthew 5:43-44](#)

[6] [1Corinthians 15:3-5](#) For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; and that he

was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures; and that he was seen of Cephas, then the twelve:

[7] [1John 4:16](#)

[8] [Matthew 10:40](#)

[9] [1John 4:8](#)

[10] [1John 4:1-2](#)

[11] [John 14:6](#)

[12] [Matthew 6:23](#) ...If therefoe the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness! (paraphrased in text)

[13] [2Corinthians 11:14](#) And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light.

- [14] [Revelation 13:13-14](#) ... and all the world wondered after the beast. And they worshipped the dragon (the Devil) which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast?....
- [15] [Genesis 1:27](#) So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.
- [16] [1John 4:8](#)
- [17] [Hebrews 12:29](#) For our God is a consuming fire.
- [18] [Acts 7:56](#) And said, Behold, I see the heavens open, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God.
- [19] [Acts 10:42](#) And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testify that it is he which was ordained of God to be the Judge of the quick (living) and dead.
- [20] [Hebrews 12:1](#) Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us.
- [21] [Ephesians 2:8-9](#) For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: not of works, lest any man should boast.
- [22] [Titus 3:5](#)
- [23] [1Corinthians 15:54](#)
- [24] [1Corinthians 15:3-4](#)
- [25] [John 17:17](#)
- [26] [John 8:31-32](#)
- [27] [Matthew 24:5](#) For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.
- [28] [Matthew 24:11](#) And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.
- [29] [2Thessalonians 2:3](#) Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition.
- [30] [2Corinthians 11:14](#)
- [31] [Matthew 24:24](#) For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.
- [32] [Revelation 13:13-14](#) And he doeth great wonders, so that he makes fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, and deceives them that dwell on the earth by means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast....
- [33] [Matthew 24:12](#)
- [34] [Luke 17:28-30](#) Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they built; but the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven,

and destroyed them all. Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed.

[35] [Matthew 24:6-8](#) And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars; ss that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. All these are the beginning of sorrows.

[36] [Matthew 24:22](#) And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.

[37] https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=W5C7t_XEAdU

[38] <http://www.catholicbryan.org/blog/dangers-of-reiki/>

[39] [John 8:32](#)

[40] [John 8:31](#)

Chapter 40

Is Revival Possible?

Now let's get back to our greater study at hand and the similarity between today's America and Israel of old. During the reign of Josiah, Manasseh's son, a revival takes place on the finding of

the Book of the Law in the house of the Lord.[\[1\]](#) *And it came to pass, when the king had heard the words of the Book of the Law, that he rent his clothes.*[\[2\]](#)

And thus begins a revival and returning back to the Words of the Lord with the king leading the way. The king commands a cleansing of the Temple of all the false gods.

And he put down the idolatrous priests, whom the kings of Judah had ordained to burn incense in the high places in the cities of Judah, and in places round about Jerusalem; them also that burned incense unto Baal, to the sun, and to the moon, and to the planets, and to all the host of heaven.[\[3\]](#) *... And he broke down the houses of the sodomites that were by the house of the Lord.*[\[4\]](#)

Again, we see that repentance and getting back to God causes the king to break down the houses of the sodomites in Jerusalem adjacent to the house of the Lord. Sodomy had been politically correct under his father, and the sodomites had wielded considerable power and influence, in as much as their houses were *“by the house of the Lord.”* But Josiah takes a stand against sodomy.

Is the homosexual community with its gay-lobby wielding excessive influence over our government, our entertainment industry and even our religious institutions, so much so that we accept gay marriage and allow gay couples to adopt children? Is

God pleased with the decisions we have made? Have we gotten off-center and are doing the Lord warned us not to?

Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter![\[5\]](#)

Josiah also stopped the worship of Molech:

that no man might make his son or daughter pass through the fire to Molech.[\[6\]](#)

The worship of Molech with its child sacrifice, as we have noted earlier, was similar to modern-day man's abortion clinics. By offering your child to Molech, the false priests promised you material blessing and wealth. Many of today's modern-day abortion or unborn child sacrifices are because of potential financial problems the future child could cause. Therefore, we sacrifice or abort the unborn child. We conveniently call it a "fetus," so that subconsciously we don't feel we are actually killing a person. The sacrifice we make is to the God of Materialism, because having children is expensive and we prefer to maintain a certain financial status, or to alleviate society from having to care for the burden of the poor who always seem to produce prolifically.

We even have "the day-after pill" which makes it easier and limits the number of actual bloody abortions. The warning on the little white paper inside the pill box admonishes the taker of the health dangers. Such pills should only be used once in a six-month period. However, a young friend of mine from a Southern European country told me that young girls were popping them like aspirins, once or twice a weekend. Today's newspaper said there has been a 30% increase in the "day-after pill" sales, which has caused a decrease in abortions.

Interesting enough, when I looked up Molech I found that the Babylonians did not practice child sacrifice in their religion. They

were pantheistic and used the occult, but they did not commit child sacrifice. [7]

Therefore, they were more righteous in God's eyes than Israel. Israel had adopted the atrocious behavior of the Canaanites whom God had commanded the Israelites to supplant. Again and again in the scriptures we see the Lord's hatred for the killing of innocent blood. God even called Nebuchadnezzar his razor. [8]

Josiah's cleansing continues.

And slew all the priests of the high places that were there upon the altars. [9] Moreover the workers with familiar spirits, and the wizards, and the images, and the idols, and all the abominations that were spied in the land of Judah and in Jerusalem, did Josiah put away, that he might perform the words of the Law which were written in the Book that the priest found in the house of the Lord. [10] And like unto him was there no king before him, that turned to the Lord with all his heart, and with all his soul, and with all his might, according to all the Law of Moses; neither after him arose there any like him. Notwithstanding the Lord turned not from the fierceness of His great wrath, wherewith His anger was kindled against Judah, because of all the provocations that Manasseh had provoked Him withal. [11] And also for the innocent blood that he shed: for he filled Jerusalem with innocent blood; which the Lord would not pardon. [12]

Could the innocent blood that the Lord is talking about, be the blood of the children offered in child sacrifice? What blood could be more innocent than that of a young child? Since the 1964 Supreme Court ruling making abortion legal, an estimated 50,000,000 unborn children have lost their lives in America alone.

Can God forget the bloodshed of these poor innocents? In Jerusalem He could not. Will He forgive America and other

nations of the world for their similar sins? I think not. As the Lord said to Jeremiah,

Before I formed thee in the belly, I knew thee; and before thou came forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I have made thee a prophet unto the nations.[\[13\]](#)

In other words, we are God's children from the moment of conception. Also, God's warnings from the mouth of Jeremiah were not just for Israel of old, but for all nations, even those today, even America.

After Josiah's death in battle, it is written,

And all Judah and Jerusalem mourned for Josiah.[\[14\]](#) ***And Jeremiah lamented for Josiah: and all the singing men and the singing women spoke of Josiah in their lamentations to this day.***[\[15\]](#)

We should note that even though the nation repented because of the effect of a righteous king, the repentance was short-lived and the nation soon fell back into her evil ways.

Notes:

- [1] [2Kings 22:8](#)
- [2] [2Kings 22:11](#)
- [3] [2Kings 23:5](#)
- [4] [2Kings 23:7](#)
- [5] [Isaiah 5:20](#)
- [6] [2Kings 23:10](#)
- [7] <http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/articles/10937-moloch-molech>
- [8] [Ezekiel 5:1-4](#)
- [9] [2Kings 23:20](#)
- [10] [2Kings 23:24](#)
- [11] [2Kings 23:25-26](#)
- [12] [2Kings 24:4](#)
- [13] [Jeremiah 1:5](#)
- [14] [2Chronicles 35:24](#)
- [15] [2Chronicles 35:25](#)

Chapter 41

In Defense of Heterosexuality

Before going any further, I am going to have to make a short defense of my position on homosexuality because I know it will cause some people to become very upset. You'll think, what's the matter, are you homophobic? Can't you respect other people's viewpoints, even other people's God-given natural tendencies? Don't you know that some people are just born homosexual and don't even have a choice? It's in their genes! That's the way God made them. Aren't you being narrow-minded and unloving? And you call yourself a Christian. I mean, the atheists are more understanding than you are!

Therefore, for the sake of some of you who are looking for more in depth answers, here I go.

First of all, we need to ask ourselves the following question: Are there moral absolutes? If there are moral absolutes, where do we find them, or where do they come from? You might say that they are just conventions of society. If they are, why do we find many of these conventions are the same worldwide? Why should that be? Another question to ask is, where does our conscience come from? Why do we have a conscience? Why does our conscience speak to us when we do something we know we shouldn't do?

The assumption that our conscience evolved over millions of years doesn't make sense. How does a mind, a conscience, which as far as we can tell is not a physical entity, evolve? We have been fooled by the idea of "millions of years," the idea that anything is possible, if given enough time. But as atheist scientist Sir Fredrick Hoyle asserted, the discovery of the DNA molecule has put evolutionary biology in the category of make-believe. It is just not possible that we are here by a chance accident.

Sir Hoyle was a famous British mathematician and astronomer who questioned the very origins of the first cell forming through naturalistic evolution. He said,

The likelihood of the formation of life from inanimate matter is one to a number with 40,000 zeros after it. It is big enough to bury Darwin and the whole General Theory of Evolution. There was no primordial soup, neither on this planet nor any other, and if the beginnings of life were not random, they must, therefore, have been the product of purposeful intelligence.[\[1\]](#)

As a mathematician he strongly argued against the statistical probability of random evolution. Because the improbability was so high, he had no other choice but to conclude that evolution without an intelligent designer was impossible.

In a like sense, if we go back to the questions of objective morality, and where does the moral law we find within us, our conscience, come from, we find the better answer is that an intelligent designer has given us a conscience, not evolution. Conscience is therefore that Intelligent Designer's presence within man.

The reason why all men throughout the world are repulsed at the abuse of a small child or a defenseless woman or old person is because moral absolutes do exist. Since moral absolutes do exist, we must ask the question, where do they come from? Did they just evolve over millions of years?

Again, the best answer is that they come from the Moral Law-Giver, from the Creator of Heaven and Earth. Like Newton said,

This most beautiful system of the sun, planets, and comets, could only proceed from the counsel and dominion of an intelligent and powerful Being.This Being governs all things, not as the soul of the world, but as Lord over all;

and on account of His dominion He is wont to be called Lord God "pantokrator," or Universal Ruler....[\[2\]](#)

Thomas Jefferson in a letter written to John Adams in 1823 made the same point. He wrote,

On the contrary I hold (without appeal to revelation) that when we take a view of the Universe, in it's parts general or particular, it is impossible for the human mind not to percieve and feel a conviction of design, consummate skill, and indefinite power in every atom of it's composition. The movements of the heavenly bodies, so exactly held in their course by the balance of centrifugal and centripetal forces, the structure of our earth itself, with it's distribution of lands, waters and atmosphere, animal and vegetable bodies, examined in all their minutest particles, insects mere atoms of life, yet as perfectly organised as man or mammoth, the mineral substances, their generation and uses, it is impossible, I say, for the human mind not to believe that there is, in all this, design, cause and effect, up to an ultimate cause, a fabricator of all things from matter and motion, their preserver and regulator while permitted to exist in their present forms, and their regenerator into new and other forms. We see, too, evident proofs of the necessity of a superintending power to maintain the Universe in it's course and order. Stars, well known, have disappeared, new ones have come into view, comets, in their incalculable courses, may run foul of suns and planets and require renovation under other laws; certain races of animals are become extinct; and, were there no restoring power, all existences might extinguish successively, one by one, until all should be reduced to a shapeless chaos. So irresistible are these evidences of an intelligent and powerful Agent that, of the infinite numbers of men who have existed thro' all time, they have believed, in the proportion of a million at least to one, in the hypothesis of an eternal pre-existence of a creator, rather than in that of a self-existent Universe. Surely this

unanimous sentiment renders this more probable than that of the few in the other hypothesis.[3]

Our absolute moral laws actually come from God's mind, which He has put within our conscience. The principles laid down in the ***Bible*** claim to be from the mind of God the Creator and they also correspond to those moral laws we find within our conscience.

Most people would say that we shouldn't kill, except perhaps in self-defense. Most people would say that under normal circumstances we shouldn't steal, cheat, or lie. Most people would say we should be kind to others, that we should treat others like we ourselves would want to be treated in any given situation. These moral absolutes are the same principles laid down in God's Word and they are found in all know cultures.

But mankind throughout history has hardened his heart and seared his conscience with a hot iron so that he could live in rebellion against God, free from God's overlying moral laws. God's ultimate condemnation of Israel was for the abominations she committed in allowing her children to pass through the fires of Moloch, for the shedding of innocent blood openly in Jerusalem, for disobeying His inherent moral law that life was sacred.[4] What blood is more innocent than that of a new-born child? God considered the ancient customs of sacrificing new born children to the god Moloch an abomination. The equivalent today would be the abortion of the unborn child? God's Word says that God ultimately judged Israel for the sins of Manasseh, which we covered in a previous chapter.

But besides child sacrifice, what else was Manasseh doing that was evil in the sight of the Lord? What were the abominations of the heathen that God had forbid Israel to partake of? I would put forward that one of the abominations of the heathen that God had warned Israel to not conform to was the acceptance of homosexual behavior. In ***Leviticus*** we read,

Moreover thou shalt not lie carnally with thy neighbour's wife, to defile thyself with her. And thou shalt not let any of thy seed pass through the fire to Molech, neither shalt thou profane the name of thy God: I am the LORD. Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination. Neither shalt thou lie with any beast to defile thyself therewith.

Defile not ye yourselves in any of these things: for in all these the nations are defiled which I cast out before you: And the land is defiled: therefore I do visit the iniquity thereof upon it, and the land itself vomits out her inhabitants. Ye shall therefore keep My statutes and My judgments, and shall not commit any of these abominations; neither any of your own nation, nor any stranger that sojourns among you.[\[5\]](#)

When Josiah, Manasseh's grandson started a revival in Israel, as we read earlier, one of the first things he did after initiating the rereading of God's Word and the removing of the high priests of other religions, was that

he braked down the houses of the sodomites, that were by the house of the Lord,....and he defied Topheth, which is in the valley of the children of Hinnom, that no man might make his son or his daughter to pass through the fire to Moloch.[\[6\]](#)

In other words, he abolished the acceptance of homosexual behavior and stopped infanticide.

Jesus Himself made reference to the “*days of Sodom and Gomorrah*” in the book of *Luke*.

Likewise, also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they built; but the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all.[\[7\]](#)

One of the sins of Sodom and Gomorrah was homosexual behavior.[\[8\]](#) [\[9\]](#) But Ezekiel also mentions other sins when he compares Jerusalem's sins to Sodom's:

Behold, this was the iniquity of thy sister Sodom, pride, fullness of bread, and abundance of idleness was in her and in her daughter (Gomorrah), neither did she strengthen the hand of the poor and needy. And they were haughty and committed abomination before Me: therefore I took them away as I saw good.[\[10\]](#)

So these other "sins" are also offensive in God's eyes. God is not just coming down on homosexuality. He comes down on all behaviors He finds abominable. He has written it in His Word and within our conscience.

In *Leviticus*, by a "coincidence", we find the verse about infanticide together with the verse about homosexual behavior.

And thou shall not let any of thy seed pass through the fire to Moloch, neither shall thou profane the name of thy God; I am the Lord. Thou shall not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination.[\[11\]](#)

But the verse before says,

Moreover thou shall not lie carnally with thy neighbor's wife, to defile thyself with her,[\[12\]](#)

showing that the *Bible* also condemns lustful heterosexual relations.

There is a story in the *Old Testament* of the prophet's wife, a former prostitute, who was defiled by "*Sons of Belial*" and left to die. The whole tribe of Benjamin was going to be eliminated by the other tribes of Israel because of it.[\[13\]](#) The "*Sons of Belial*" seems to not only include those with homosexual behavior, but also a kind of perverted wildness, out-of-control aggressive perverted sex, like anal sex and bestiality.[\[14\]](#) Kind of like the

stories that have been told about the sex life of some of the famous musicians.

We know that Jesus took the Word of God seriously and quoted from it constantly. He did this differently from the Scribes and Pharisees who used the Word of God to condemn and control the people. Jesus showed the true spirit of the Word in His attempt to enlighten and free the people from these false religious leaders. In *Ezekiel 34* we find one of God's stern warnings to the false shepherds who feed themselves, but do not feed the flock of God.

And the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, Son of man, prophesy against the shepherds of Israel, prophesy, and say unto them, Thus says the Lord GOD unto the shepherds; Woe be to the shepherds of Israel that do feed themselves! should not the shepherds feed the flocks? Ye eat the fat, and ye clothe you with the wool, ye kill them that are fed: but ye feed not the flock. The diseased have ye not strengthened, neither have ye healed that which was sick, neither have ye bound up that which was broken, neither have ye brought again that which was driven away, neither have ye sought that which was lost; but with force and with cruelty have ye ruled them. And they were scattered, because there is no shepherd: and they became meat to all the beasts of the field, when they were scattered. My sheep wandered through all the mountains, and upon every high hill: yea, My flock was scattered upon all the face of the earth, and none did search or seek after them.[\[15\]](#)

Therefore, ye shepherds, hear the word of the LORD; As I live, says the Lord GOD, surely because My flock became a prey, and My flock became meat to every beast of the field, because there was no shepherd, neither did My shepherds search for My flock, but the shepherds fed themselves, and fed not My flock; Therefore, O ye shepherds, hear the word of the LORD; Thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I am

against the shepherds; and I will require My flock at their hand, and cause them to cease from feeding the flock; neither shall the shepherds feed themselves any more; for I will deliver My flock from their mouth, that they may not be meat for them.[16]

Of course, God has already taken His flock from the false shepherds of Israel. But Christian leaders must now apply God's Word to themselves. Surely we have been guilty of being false shepherds, also.

For thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I, even I, will both search My sheep, and seek them out. As a shepherd seeks out his flock in the day that he is among his sheep that are scattered; so will I seek out My sheep, and will deliver them out of all places where they have been scattered in the cloudy and dark day. [17]

I will feed My flock, and I will cause them to lie down, says the Lord GOD. I will seek that which was lost, and bring again that which was driven away, and will bind up that which was broken, and will strengthen that which was sick: but I will destroy the fat and the strong; I will feed them with judgment. And as for you, O My flock, thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I judge between cattle and cattle, between the rams and the he goats. Seems it a small thing unto you to have eaten up the good pasture, but ye must tread down with your feet the residue of your pastures? and to have drunk of the deep waters, but ye must foul the residue with your feet? And as for My flock, they eat that which ye have trodden with your feet; and they drink that which ye have fouled with your feet.[18]

We as church pastors or church leaders should meditate on Ezekiel's warning. We need to make sure we are feeding God's flock and not just making sure that they are feeding us. Now let's get back the subject at hand.

It is true that homosexuality has not been properly approached by much of the Church. The Christian teaching I received from childhood has always impressed on me the importance of being a good example. In order to reach people and connect them to Jesus, you need to first lovingly accept them. But I also have learned it is important to have convictions. My own convictions come from my belief that the **Bible** is truly the Word of God and not of men. This is not an arbitrary belief but comes from personal study and life experience. However, God's Word needs to be rightly divided and understood through the Spirit which Jesus clearly manifested.

Apostle Paul tells us

The natural man receives not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.[\[19\]](#)

In other words, until the mind and heart of the unbeliever has been illuminated by God's Spirit, the reasoning of the Christian, his defense of his belief system, seems like foolishness to the unbeliever. That is why the atheist and the believer seem eons apart when they confront one another in conversation or debate. Their belief systems are based on totally different "truths," or basic assumptions, and thus affect how they interpret the world around them. They see things in a totally different manner. It is because their initial belief systems are at variance.

Looking back to the Words of Jesus in the book of **John**, we see Jesus doesn't condemn the adulterous woman, but yet He tells her to go and sin no more.[\[20\]](#) By His actions and love He is affecting change in the woman's worldview. Obviously, He is not accepting adultery, but embracing the adulterer. In like manner, He wasn't accepting tax corruption by going to eat with Zacchaeus. By embracing Zacchaeus, He helps him find the Kingdom of God. As a result Zacchaeus changes his belief system and his behavior and returns the money from those he has over-taxed.[\[21\]](#)

It's the same with homosexuality. Yes, we do need to accept the homosexual as Paul taught and Jesus teaches. I will respect the homosexual in my attempt to relate with him and impart the truth I have found in Christ, just as Paul did in his witnessing and in his attempts to win others to Jesus. But I do not need to embrace and accept as "normal" the homosexual behavior. I will love and respect the homosexual person, but I cannot accept a behavior that is in violation of God's Word and in violation of the moral law I have within my conscience.

I may be old-fashioned, but I have seen that the philosophy of relativism or utilitarianism or morality measured by what is acceptable by the majority of the people moves society away from the moral absolutes of God's Word and reality. That is why the world is in such a mess as it is today. We have moved away from the moral absolutes and have nothing left to stand on. Yes, God's Word does need to be always balanced and applied by the spirit of love and grace.[\[22\]](#) People do not want religion. They need to connect with Jesus, and that connection not only comes from their relationship with Him, but from knowing the truth found in God's Word.

My Christian training taught me the importance of staying free of religious Pharisee-ism. We are free from the dead religious laws of Moses, and married to Christ's liberating law of love.[\[23\]](#) Now, the most important aspect of our obedience to God is our motivation, not our outward appearance to others.

Recently, I wrote a letter to a friend sharing my beliefs about creation and the book of **Genesis**. He believes that **Genesis 1** is poetry and therefore is not applicable to scientific theories on origins. But according to Dr. Weston Fields **Genesis** is not poetry. In his in depth study ***Unformed and Unfilled: A Critique of the Gap Theory***, Dr. Fields concludes the Hebrew text may be "poetic," as is much of the **Bible**, but it is not written in figurative language and it cannot be harmonized with science's "billions of years."[\[24\]](#)

One of the best known scholars of Hebrew, Dr. James Barr of Oxford University, wrote some twenty years ago, that as far as he knew,

there is no professor of Hebrew or Old Testament at any world-class university who does not believe that the writer(s) of Genesis 1–11 intended to convey to their readers the ideas that (a) creation took place in a series of six days which were the same as the days of 24 hours we now experience (b) the figures contained in the Genesis genealogies provided by simple addition a chronology from the beginning of the world up to later stages in the biblical story.[25]

Dr. Barr was not saying he believed in a six-day creation six-thousand years ago. Rather, he was saying that he believed that the writers of **Genesis** meant to convey that meaning to their audience. Even though a simple reading of **Genesis 1** presents a six-day creation process, the modern man cannot accept it. Why? Because we have been convinced science has proven that the earth is billions of years old.

From a superficial reading of Genesis 1, the impression would seem to be that the entire Creative process took place in six twenty-four – days. If this was the true intent of the Hebrew author... this seems to run counter to modern scientific research, which indicates that the planet Earth was created several billion years ago.[26]

If we accept the idea that the earth is indeed billions of years old, we cannot accept a literal reading of **Genesis 1**. If we add the evolutionary process to the billions of years, as the way God created, we have a big problem with the **Bible's** veracity and plan of salvation. We have death before sin, and the **Bible** says the opposite, which we will look at more closely in a few paragraphs.

Some Christians believe it doesn't really matter if **Genesis 1** is literal or figurative. All we need to believe is that God did it, however it happened. So Christians disagree on this dilemma.

Young Earth Creationists argue against the attempts to harmonize the Scriptures with modern ideas of origins proposed by science. But many modernistic Christians have done just that, accepting both “millions of years,” and “molecule-to-man” evolution.

In *The Jesuits: The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*, Father Malachi Martin makes a case against the influential Jesuit evolutionist Pierre Teilhard de Chardin. Using a whole chapter, Father Martin explains Teilhard’s influence in taking the Jesuits and the Catholic Church away from the traditional Christian doctrine of creation and into an evolutionary New Age theology.[\[27\]](#)

In *The Long War Against God: The History and Impact of the Creation/Evolution Conflict*, Dr. Henry Morris quotes from Teilhard, whom he believes was one of the most famous Christian modernists. To Teilhard, the acceptance of evolution was essential. He saw evolution as being the most fundamental “truth,” and therefore the foundation of understanding everything else. He wrote,

Evolution is a general postulate to which all theories, all hypothesis, all systems must henceforth bow and which they must satisfy in order to be thinkable and true. Evolution is a light which illuminates facts, a trajectory which all lines of thought must follow.[\[28\]](#)

Here we see Teilhard confessing that evolution is his initial belief system. His belief that evolution is true is his most basic assumption and affects how he views and interprets everything else around him. Father Martin states that if one accepts Teilhard’s ideas, he must abandon standard Christian doctrine. He writes,

Creation, Original Sin, the divinity of Jesus, redemption by Jesus’ death on the cross of Calvary,... the forgiveness of sins, ...Hell, Heaven, supernatural grace - even existence

and the freedom of God – all must be reformulated, and perhaps abandoned in large part.[29]

Thomas Huxley, known as ‘Darwin’s Bulldog’ for his adamant defense of evolution, came to this same conclusion over 150 years ago. Ken Ham writes,

Thomas Huxley was an ardent humanist. Huxley went around the world “preaching” evolution and putting down Christianity. But when he saw the theologians of the day accepting evolution and then adding it to the Bible (but still trying to defend Christianity), Huxley pointed out to these compromisers how inconsistent that was. He showed them that if they believed in evolution, they couldn’t believe in the doctrines of the New Testament, and would have to throw away the whole message of Christianity.[30]

If we are honest, we must agree with Huxley’s, Ham’s and Martin’s conclusions. If evolution and “millions of years” are true, then we have death before sin, as we have “millions of years” of life and death before the first man “Adam.” The **Bible** tells us that it was Adam’s disobedience to God, or Adam’s sin, that brought death into the world, and, therefore, the need for a Redeemer, the need for Christ.[31][32][33][34] If evolution is true and death came before man, then the **Bible** is false and there was no original sin and no need for Christ’s death on the cross for all humanity. So, both stories cannot be true. They contradict one another. Mr. Huxley saw this point and criticized the Christians who compromised and accepted millions of years of evolution and still tried to defend the **Bible**.

Therefore, either we accept and defend a literal six-day Creation story, or we need to throw the whole **Bible** out. That’s why Dr. Field’s arguments in favor of a literal reading of **Genesis 1** is so important. If God’s Word says He did it in six days, then He did.

God's Word is the foundation of my belief system. It has not always been. I came to belief through an intense searching and seeking for the truth. Since finding Christ, I have further investigated and found Christian scientists and apologists who have proposed very reasonable answers to the difficult questions that a billion-year-old universe seems to present to the Biblical creationist.

The Christian faith is not a "blind faith," but conforms to good reason and logic. Unlike other major faiths, Christianity encourages investigation and inspection. St. Peter has admonished us to be ready to give a reasoned defense of our Christian belief. Though our Christian belief has been revealed to us by "faith," it is not blind to reason; in fact, our faith is the conclusion of sound reason.

In my research for reasonable answers to the question of origins, I have found reputable scientists like Dr. Russell Humphreys and others that have developed scientific and mathematical theories to validate the literal six-day six thousand-years-old Biblical origin story. These scientists take the truth of the ***Bible*** as their initial assumption and from there do their science. All scientists start their scientific research with improvable initial assumptions. Men like Kepler, Newton, Pasteur, and many other scientists of the past and present have used the ***Bible*** as their foundation belief system and have done excellent science, with amazing results. Humphreys, using Einstein's theories, has found a way to explain the seeming contradictions of a six thousand-year-old planet in a billion-year-old universe. Using time dilation and gravity, and conforming to all known laws of science; he shows how a six thousand-year-old earth could be a physical possibility in a universe which seems to be billions of years old.[\[35\]](#)

Apologist Dr. Greg L. Bahnsen shows how the Christian presuppositional belief system is the only reasonable belief system, because it is the only belief system not in conflict with empirical evidence, nor the laws of logic, nor the laws of science.

It's the only belief system that gives us the preconditions for intelligence that make science and knowing anything possible. Like CS Lewis said,

If the solar system was brought about by an accidental collision, then the appearance of organic life on this planet was also an accident, and the whole evolution of Man was an accident too. If so, then all our present thoughts are mere accidents—the accidental by-product of the movement of atoms. And this holds for the thoughts of the materialists and astronomers as well as for anyone else's. But if their thoughts—i.e. of materialism and astronomy—are merely accidental by-products, why should we believe them to be true? I see no reason for believing that one accident should be able to give me a correct account of all the other accidents. It's like expecting that the accidental shape taken by the splash when you upset a milkjug should give you a correct account of how the jug was made and why it was upset.[36]

As Christians, we have a good reasons to assume the preconditions of intelligibility, because God is sufficient reason to explain why we can think, why universal morally exists, and why we can trust that tomorrow's world will operate in a similar fashion as today's. But if evolution and naturalism are true and we are just here as a cosmic accident, how can we explain where the laws of logic come from? Why would we expect laws of logic in an accidental, meaningless, uncaused universe? Why would we expect to be able to think and to love? What would be the reason for universal object morality? Why would we expect uniformity in science, i.e., that the laws of science are the same throughout the universe and throughout time, and that they will be consistent tomorrow as they were today?[37]

In his book, *Always Ready: Directions for Defending the Faith*,[\[38\]](#) Dr. Bahnsen presents tools to help the lay person improve their defense of their faith. In talking about the use of

reason with faith, he quotes from Sr. John Locke, the famous British social and political thinker of the 17th century, the Age of Reason. Locke was considered by many to be the “Father of British Empiricism.” Like his contemporaries Newton, Boyle, and

Milton, Locke was a strong *Bible*-believer. He said,

The Holy Scripture is to me, and always will be, the constant guide of my assent; and I will always hearken to it, as containing the infallible truth relating to things of the highest concernment....Where I want (lack) the evidence of things, there yet is ground enough for me to believe, because God has said it; and I will presently condemn and quit any opinion of mine, as soon as I am shown that it is contrary to any revelation of the Holy Scriptures.[39]

History is full of men who have based their life’s work on the veracity of the Scriptures. William Gladstone, four-time Prime Minister of England, is quoted as having said,

I have known ninety-five of the world's great men in my time, and of these, eighty-seven were followers of the Bible. The Bible is stamped with a Specialty of Origin, and an immeasurable distance separates it from all competitors.[40]

Researching the historicity of Christ, I have found such authors as J. Warner Wallace, who has written a book entitled *Cold-Case Christianity: A Homicide Detective Investigates the Claims of the Gospels*. Using his experience as a cold-case criminal police investigator, Wallace, a former atheist, looked at the claims of Christianity. He analyzed the events around the death and supposed Resurrection of Christ and the testimony of the witnesses in both Scripture and secular writings, just as he would do for a criminal case that has remained unsolved for many years. His conclusion: the evidence and the testimonies of witnesses affirm Christianity’s claims.[41] Similarly, Professor

Dr. Gary Habermas with Mike Licona have written on the same subject in their study entitled *Case for the Resurrection of Jesus*.[\[42\]](#) Habermas's YouTube talks about the Minimal Facts Method are worth watching.[\[43\]](#)

In investigating the radioactive dating methods which seem to confirm “billions-of-years,” I have found them to be very lacking. 90% of the scientific dating methods available confirm a young earth. Yet all we hear of are the few that seem to verify “billions-of-years.” Dr. John Morris has done a thorough study and analysis of the dating methods in his book *The Young Earth: The Real History of the Earth; Past, Present and Future*, which examines the problems with radio-active dating and explains why the dates found can't be trusted.[\[44\]](#) Dr. Morris explains,

Unfortunately, evolutionists seldom admit they have presuppositions (or initial assumptions that are believed without evidence). They present their view of history and their interpretation as if they were observed facts. Students and laymen alike are either duped by authority or intimidated into acceptance of a world view with its philosophical and religious implications without even knowing what happened. Simply put, most people believe in evolution, because most people believe in evolution. It is all they have been taught. If creation is even mentioned it is ridiculed and unfairly caricatured. Thus, evolution is assumed, not proved; and creation is denied, not refuted...One must always discern the difference between scientific data and interpretations of those data, and the observed past and the unobserved, inferred past.[\[45\]](#)

We do need to do some studying, some digging to find the answers. In each area I had questions; I have done research and found reasonable answers, answers which confirm the Biblical narrative. But it's taken me some effort. I have had to seek to find. I remember being a young college student with the problem of my imminent induction into the military during the Vietnam War period. I had to make some serious decisions on what I was

going to do. I had joined a fraternity during the last part of my first year at school. In my second year I moved into the fraternity house as my dormitory. My colleagues would spend their evening playing cards or watching television together. But because I was desperate to find answers, I decided to not watch television or play cards. I spent my free-time hid away in my room reading books in search of answers. I would even avoid the parties and booze on the weekend, and instead spend time with Tolstoy or Twain evaluating the problem of war and my position in relation to it.

In regards to the scientific questions of origins of the universe, the conclusions of Dr. Russell Humphreys are as plausible an explanation as any others and may even fit the accessible evidence more accurately. He proposes that since gravity affects time, and if our galaxy is close to the gravitation well of the entire universe, then it is possible, using Einstein's theories, to have a six thousand-year-old planet earth, by earth time, while at the very outer parts of the universe billions of years could have elapsed.[\[46\]](#)

It all depends on your starting assumptions. If the ***Bible*** is truly God's Word and God's communication to man, then you start your scientific assumptions based on the claims in God's Word. However, if the ***Bible*** is not true, where do you take your initial assumptions from?

We all have initial assumptions. Every scientist starts his science having some basic philosophical assumptions. He then incorporates those assumptions into the initial criteria of his scientific investigation. Dr. George Ellis, who worked with Dr. Stephen Hawking on the Big Bang cosmology, confessed that they ***must*** start with philosophical assumptions first.

You cannot do physics or cosmology without an assumed philosophical basis. You can choose not to think about that basis: it will still be there as an unexamined foundation of what you do. The fact you are unwilling to examine the

philosophical foundations of what you do does not mean those foundations are not there; it just means they are unexamined.[\[47\]](#)

My colleagues are producing theories of what they call creation of the universe out of nothing. But when you probe them, you find they're not producing theories of creation of the universe out of nothing. They are assuming a huge machinery of quantum field theory and fields and particles and interactions, which generates universe, not creation of the universe out of nothing.[\[48\]](#)

I believe that the initial assumptions that are in line with the Word of God are the ones that are ultimately true. But today, a Christian is often stereotyped as a bigot, as being narrow minded and dogmatic because his initial assumption is that the **Bible** is true. Just because some Christians are self-righteous does not mean that everything they are saying is wrong. Even Jesus admonished when talking of the Pharisaical religious leaders, to do as they say and not as they do. Because they say, but do not.[\[49\]](#) Just because Christians don't always live the Christian creed, does not mean the doctrine is false.

I believe we need to modernize the way the Gospel is preached to reach a new and different generation. But if we want our work to last, we must not take out the Word of God from our witness. The Word of God is the ballast, the foundation stone of the spiritual building we are creating. Jesus Himself warned us of the importance of building our lives upon the rock of God's Word.[\[50\]](#) The danger comes when we take out God's Word from the foundation. As long as our lives are firmly planted on the Rock of God's foundation, His Word, we will remain strong no matter what modernizations are made.

But, if the foundations be removed, what shall the righteous do?[\[51\]](#)

With love we need to bring people to the light of God's Word. God's Word will help us to live in love, but will also reveal the truth which in turn will help us to discern the intents and thoughts of men's heart. It is the knowledge of God's Word which gives us discernment. As King David said,

I understand more than the ancients because I keep thy Word.[\[52\]](#)

If we throw the Word away now and say all we need is the Spirit, we are in trouble. Jesus said,

The words I speak unto you, they are spirit and they are life.[\[53\]](#)

God's Word and Spirit are uniquely joined together and are part of the definition of what and who God is.

I believe it is importance to lovingly embrace the homosexual community, as well as the Jewish community, and the Black community, and the Muslim community and the atheist community and any other community, if we can do so without losing our Biblical foundation. Instead of society affecting and changing our faith, we should be instruments of affecting change in society in a loving and compassionate way. Our goal as Christians is to help others to ultimately find the faith which we have found in Jesus and in God's Word.

Jesus said,

Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt has lost its savour, wherewith shall it be salted? It is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men.[\[54\]](#)

Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick: and it gives light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine

before men, that they may see your works, and glorify your Father which is in Heaven.[\[55\]](#)

In other words, we should be influencing others for good, otherwise, what use are we?

We may not be very successful, and we may be ostracized and labeled as intolerant, but we can console ourselves that God's Word says that these days will take place before Jesus' promised coming.

There shall come a falling away first and then shall the end come.[\[56\]](#)

And Jesus said,

When the Son of Man cometh shall he find faith on the earth?[\[57\]](#)

Jesus also said,

Had you believed Moses you would have believed Me, for he wrote of Me. But if you believe not his writings, how shall you believe My words.[\[58\]](#)

We should not throw out the written Word just because of other's misinterpretation or misrepresentation of its truth. My faith is built on God's Word. My doctrinal belief is not the first part of my witness. Love is. Doctrine is a part of it, but I also know that my point of view, my interpretation, may not be God's point of view. But hopefully I will be found to be in the tunnel of God's will and truth.

Here are some verses about behaviors that are abominations in the eyes of God found in God's Word. I am going to go over them to show that it's not just homosexuality that is abhorrent in His eyes.

Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination.[\[59\]](#)

There shall not be found among you any one that makes his son or his daughter to pass through the fire, or that uses divination, or an observer of times, or an enchanter, or a witch, Or a charmer, or a consulter with familiar spirits, a wizard, or a necromancer. For all that do these things are an abomination unto the LORD. [\[60\]](#)

Divination is one who claims secret knowledge, especially of the future. Sometimes it is translated witchcraft. Again we see that many of the New Age practices fall into this category. Reiki for examples claims to give you some secret knowledge that will get you in tune with the “universal life force” and enable you to do healings and make your life better.

Father Malachi Martin, who I have mentioned earlier in this chapter, was the Jesuit priest who worked as a personal assistant to one of the most powerful Cardinals in the Vatican. After leaving the Vatican, he spent his life to exposing what he considered the evil influences within the Vatican. In his novel, [***Windswept House: A Vatican Novel***](#), he mentions an event that took place when Pope Paul VI was made Pope. A week after his election, a ceremony of enthroning was held in the Vatican paralleling a satanic cultic act which took place simultaneously in the United States. The satanic act which took place in America included the death of a young Christian male, symbolic of the death of Christ. Father Martin warned that there existed an evil satanic group of individuals involved in pedophilia within the Catholic Church. They were international in scope and included powerful Catholic leaders. They performed satanic rites evoking the power and favor of Satan. [\[61\]](#)

John Todd, the former witch who became a born-again Christian, has also spoken of how he as a top witch was in service to the Rothschilds. He would often deliver money in cash to a church to get the church to compromise and deviate from their committed Christian convictions. He was involved in invoking demons to accompany a rock group’s music so that the music would deceive youth and lead them away from Christianity. He

was attacked profusely by the compromised Church who said he was lying or mentally confused. But I for one found much truth in what he said. He might not have gotten everything right, but none of us do. It is only when you make a stand that the enemy starts shooting at your head. Todd said the Rothschilds had their own personal covens in both Paris and London.[\[62\]](#)

If these things are so then we have satanic worship in some pretty high places. Could incidents like the Vatican's satanic rite and Rothschild's covens be examples of the ***“spiritual wickedness in high places”*** which Apostle Paul said would fight against us and which God considers an abomination?[\[63\]](#) We have seen similar satanic themes at the Grammy awards, at the Olympic Games, and at the opening of a famous tunnel through the mountains of Switzerland, to name a few.

An ***observer of times*** is one who pretends to foretell the future, sometimes translated as soothsayer, or fortune-teller. An ***enchanter*** is someone who can charm serpents. A ***witch*** is one who uses witchcraft or sorcery. A ***charmer*** is one who supposedly casts a spell. A ***consulter with familiar spirits*** is one who consults some kind of angelic being for counsel or information. In Reiki it is called calling on your 'angelic' spirit helpers.

A ***wizard*** is a man who claims to have a secret knowledge or ability. A ***necromancer*** is one who claims to consult, or to inquire with the dead.

Thou shalt not have in thy bag divers weights, a great and a small. Thou shalt not have in thine house divers measures, a great and a small. A perfect and just weight shalt thou have: that thy days may be long upon the land which the lord thy God gives thee. For all that do such things, and all that do unrighteously, are an abomination unto the LORD thy God.[\[64\]](#)

The above verses in *Deuteronomy* show that the Lord is very concerned with honesty in business. He speaks of weighing and measuring fairly and properly with just weights and measures. Therefore, cheating in business, unscrupulous business activities are just as much an abomination to the Lord as the other sins.

Cursed be the man that makes any graven or molten image, an abomination unto the LORD.[\[65\]](#)

There is something about images that God does not like. I think it has to do with mankind's tendency to worship and admire material things, or beautiful people, even nature more than God Himself. Like Paul said in *Romans*:

Who changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things.[\[66\]](#) ***Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator.***[\[67\]](#)

Our next verse about abominations is found in the *Proverbs*:

These six things doth the LORD hate: yea, seven are an abomination unto him: A proud look, a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood, An heart that devises wicked imaginations, feet that be swift in running to mischief, A false witness that speaks lies, and he that sows discord among brethren.[\[68\]](#)

Most of the condemnations are self-explanatory.

For the froward (perverse) is abomination to the LORD.[\[69\]](#) ***The way of the wicked is an abomination unto the LORD: but he loves him that follows after righteousness.***[\[70\]](#) ***Every one that is proud in heart is an abomination to the LORD.***[\[71\]](#)

Some Christian theologians say that pride is the root of all sin.

He that justifies the wicked, and he that condemns the just, even they both are abomination to the LORD.[\[72\]](#)

That judge who condemned Kent Hovind, one of the first creationist speakers, may come under the above category.

He that turns away his ear from hearing the law, even his prayer shall be abomination.[\[73\]](#)

Do we want God to hear our prayers? Then we need to get our ***Bibles*** out and read His Word and try and follow how it speaks to us. If we do, we'll be more likely to get things from God.

Hath oppressed the poor and needy, hath spoiled by violence, hath not restored the pledge, and hath lifted up his eyes to the idols, hath committed abomination, Hath given forth upon usury, and hath taken increase: shall he then live? He shall not live: he hath done all these abominations; he shall surely die; his blood shall be upon him. [\[74\]](#)

Sounds like the International Bankers will have some explaining to do!

And one hath committed abomination with his neighbour's wife; and another hath lewdly defiled his daughter-in-law; and another in thee had humbled his sister, his father's daughter.[\[75\]](#)

Out-of-control sexual conquests cause a lot of hurt and harm, and God has set limits because men are usually incapable of walking in love. It is not just homosexuality that God condemns.

But the modern man wants his freedom. Religion is too restrictive, he says. The truth is, freedom is founded in the Judeo-Christian belief system. Real freedom requires limits. We need to honor the limits God has set, because otherwise we may violate someone else's freedom. God's moral absolutes necessitate limits. Real freedom, based on Christianity, is not the absence of

all restraints, but it's submitting to the true and the right constraints.[76]

That's why Apostle Paul in the New Living Translation tells us:

So put to death the sinful, earthly things lurking within you. Have nothing to do with sexual immorality, impurity, lust, and evil desires. Don't be greedy, for a greedy person is an idolater, worshiping the things of this world.[77]

He also previously had said, and using the same translation:

Don't you realize that those who do wrong will not inherit the Kingdom of God? Don't fool yourselves. Those who indulge in sexual sin, or who worship idols, or commit adultery, or are male prostitutes, or practice homosexuality, or are thieves, or greedy people, or drunkards, or are abusive, or cheat people—none of these will inherit the Kingdom of God. Some of you were once like that. But you were cleansed; you were made holy; you were made right with God by calling on the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and by the Spirit of our God.[78]

God has set for us limits, just like He did for Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden. We need limits. They are for our over-all good. They are to keep us out of trouble. They are to keep us and other healthy. They are to help us act lovingly.

And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knows your hearts: for that which is highly esteem among men is abomination in the sight of God.[79]

Are we seeking praise from God, or from man?

And there shall in no wise enter into it anything that defiles, neither whatsoever works abomination, or makes

a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.[\[80\]](#)

Liars get the same fate as those who work abomination, so therefore lying is an abomination. Jesus has told us that the Devil himself is the father of lies.[\[81\]](#) Don't deal in lies. Speak the truth in love every man with his neighbor.[\[82\]](#)

Surely there was not kept such a Passover from the days of the judges that judged Israel, nor in all the days of the kings of Israel, nor of the kings of Judah; but in the eighteenth year of the king Josiah was this Passover kept to the Lord in Jerusalem. Moreover them that had familiar spirits, and the wizards, and the images, and the idols, and all the abominations that were spied in the land of Judah and in Jerusalem did Josiah put away, that he might confirm the words of the law which were written in the book that Hilkiah the priest found in the house of the Lord. And like unto him was there no king before him that turned to the Lord with all his heart, and with all his soul, and with all his might, according to all the Law of Moses; neither after him arose any like him. Notwithstanding the Lord turned not from the fierceness of his great wrath, wherewith his anger was kindled against Judah, because of all the provocations that Manasseh had provoked him withal. And the Lord said, I will remove Judah also out of my sight, as I have removed Israel, and I will cast off this city which I have chosen, even Jerusalem, and the house of which I said, My name shall be there.[\[83\]](#)

Again, a strong warning to America and the nations of the world to get back to God, but they will not.

Notes:

[1] Hoyle, Sir Fred, and Chandra Wickramasinghe, *Evolution from Space* ; New York: Simon & Schuster, 1984.

<http://www.oocities.org/promo777/quotesof.htm>

[2] Newton, Sir Isaac, <http://www.icr.org/article/newton/>; Man of Science, Man of God: Isaac Newton; by Christine Dao. (accessed 03/2016)

[3]

http://www.beliefnet.com/resourcelib/docs/53/Letter_from_Thomas_Jefferson_to_John_Adams_1.html (accessed 08/2016)

[4] [2Kings 21:16](#) Moreover Manasseh shed innocent blood very much, till he had filled Jerusalem from one end to another; besides his sin wherewith he made Judah to sin, in doing that which was evil in the sight of the Lord.

[5] [Leviticus 18:20-26](#)

[6] [2Kings 23:7-10](#)

[7] [Luke 17:28-29](#)

[8] [Genesis 18:20-21](#) And the Lord said, Because the cry of Sodom and Gomorrah is great, and because their sin is very grievous; I will go down now, and see whether they have done altogether according to the cry of it, which is come unto me; and if not, I will know.

[9] [Genesis 19:1-11](#) And there came two angels to Sodom at even; and Lot sat in the gate of Sodom: and Lot seeing them rose up to meet them; and he bowed himself with his face toward the ground; And he said, Behold now, my lords, turn in, I pray you, into your servant's house, and tarry all night, and wash your feet, and ye shall rise up early, and go on your ways. And they said, Nay; but we will abide in the street all night. And he pressed upon them greatly; and they turned in unto him, and entered into his house; and he made them a feast, and did bake unleavened bread, and they did eat. But before they lay down, the men of the city, even the men of Sodom, compassed the house round, both old and young, all the people from every quarter: And they called unto Lot, and said unto him, Where are the men which came in to thee this night? bring them out unto us, that we may **know** them. And Lot went out at the door unto them, and shut the door after him, And said, I pray you, brethren, do not so wickedly. Behold now, I have two daughters which have not **known** man; let me, I pray you, bring them out unto you, and do ye to them as is good in your eyes: only unto these men do nothing; for therefore came they under the shadow of my roof. And they said, Stand back. And they said again, This one fellow came in to sojourn, and he will needs be a judge: now will we deal worse with thee, than with them. And they pressed sore upon the man, even Lot, and came near to break the door. But the men put forth their hand, and pulled Lot into the house to them, and shut to the door. And they smote the men that were at the door of the house with blindness, both small and great: so that they wearied themselves to find the door. (**knew/know**): [Genesis 4:1](#) And Adam **knew** Eve his wife; and she conceived, and bare Cain, and said, I have gotten a man from the LORD. [Genesis 4:25](#) And Adam **knew** his wife again; and she bare a son, and called his name Seth: For God, said she, hath appointed me another seed instead of Abel, whom Cain slew.

- [10] [Ezekiel 16:49-50](#)
- [11] [Leviticus 18:21&22](#)
- [12] [Leviticus 18:20](#)
- [13] [Judges 19-21](#)
- [14] [Judges 19:22-25](#) Now as they were making their hearts merry, behold, the men of the city, certain sons of Belial, beset the house round about, and beat at the door, and spake to the master of the house, the old man, saying, Bring forth the man that came into thine house, that we may *know* him. And the man, the master of the house, went out unto them, and said unto them, Nay, my brethren, nay, I pray you, do not so wickedly; seeing that this man is come into mine house, do not this folly. Behold, here is my daughter a maiden, and his concubine; them I will bring out now, and humble ye them, and do them what seems good unto you: but unto this man do not so vile a thing. But the men would not hearken to him: so the man took his concubine, and brought her forth unto them; and they *knew* her, and *abused* her all the night until the morning: and when the day began to spring, they let her go. (knew and abused)
- [15] [Ezekiel 34:1-6](#)
- [16] [Ezekiel 34:7-10](#)
- [17] [Ezekiel 34:11-12](#)
- [18] [Ezekiel 34:15-19](#)
- [19] [1Corinthians 2:14](#)
- [20] [John 8:1-11](#)
- [21] [Luke 19:1-10](#)
- [22] [John 1:17](#) For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.
- [23] [Romans 7:4](#) Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that ye should bring forth fruit unto God.
- [24] Fields, Dr. Weston; *Unformed and Unfilled: A Critique of the Gap Theory*; Master Books; Green Forest, Arizona; 1976.
<http://www.biblearchaeology.org/bookstore/product.aspx?id=222> (03/2016)
- [25] (As quoted by Dr. Jud Davis) <https://answersingenesis.org/days-of-creation/24-hours-plain-as-day/> (03/16)
- [26] Gleason Archer, *A Survey of Old Testament Introduction*, Moody Press, USA, 1985, pg.187.
- [27] Martin, Malachi; *The Jesuits: The Society of Jesus and the Betrayal of the Roman Catholic Church*; Simon and Schuster Paperbacks, New York; 1987; pages 285-302.
<http://pdf.amazingdiscoveries.org/The%20Jesuits.pdf> (03/16)
- [28] Morris, Dr. Henry; *The Long War Against God: The History and Impact of the Creation/Evolution Conflict*; Master Books, Arizona, 2000; page 22.

https://books.google.pt/books/about/The_Long_War_Against_God.html?id=uNTF-qfojZQC&redir_esc=y (accessed 03/2016)

[29] Martin, Malachi; *The Jesuits*; Simon and Schuster Paperbacks, New York; 1987; page 288.

<http://pdf.amazingdiscoveries.org/The%20Jesuits.pdf> (03/16)

[30] <https://answersingenesis.org/education/study-guides/answer-key-for-the-answers-with-ken-ham-study-guide/> (accessed 03/2016)

[31] [Genesis 2:17](#) But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eats thereof thou shalt surely die.

[32] [Genesis 3:17-19](#) And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it was thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.

[33] [Romans 5:12](#) Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.

[34] [1Corinthians 15:20-21](#) But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first-fruits of them that slept. For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.

[35] Humphreys, Dr. Russell;

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=mooHSXTR2RE> (accessed 03/2016)

[36] C.S. Lewis, *The Business of Heaven*, Fount Paperbacks, U.K., p. 97, 1984.

[37] Jason Lisle, *The Ultimate Proof of Creation*, Masters Books, Arizona, 2009.

[38] Bahnsen, Dr. Greg;

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=uh7nVRsNKF4> (accessed 03/2016)

[39] Cited by Bahnsen, Dr. Greg; *Always Ready: Directions for Defending the Faith*; Covenant Media Press, Texas; 1996; page 134.

[40] <http://www.nairaland.com/2499498/quotes-famous-men-bible> (03/16)

[41] <http://coldcasechristianity.com/> (accessed 03/2016)

[42] <http://www.garyhabermas.com/> (accessed 03/2016)

[43] https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ay_Db4RwZ_M (accessed 03/16)

[44] <http://www.temcat.com/L-4-Topical-Library/Creation/TheYoung-Earth.pdf>

[45] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3r85wpZkY6s> (accessed 03/2016)

[46] John Morris, *The Young Earth*, Master Books, Arizona, 1994, pg.20.

- [47] Ellis, Dr. George; *Physicist George Ellis Knocks Physicists for Knocking Philosophy, Falsification, Free Will*; John Horgan, Scientific American, July 22, 2014. <http://hyperphysics.phy-astr.gsu.edu/nave-html/faithpathh/Ellis.html> (03/16)
- [48] Ellis, Dr. George; <http://www.onbeing.org/blog/wonder-cosmos-through-upgraded-lens/3650> (accessed 03/2016)
- [49] [Matthew 23:3](#) All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works; for they say, and do not.
- [50] [Matthew 7:24-25](#) Therefore whosoever hears these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: and the rain descended, the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock.
- [51] [Psalm 11:3](#)
- [52] [Psalm 119:100](#)
- [53] [John 6:63](#)
- [54] [Matthew 5:13](#)
- [55] [Matthew 5:14-16](#)
- [56] [2Thessalonians 2:3](#)
- [57] [Luke 18:8](#)
- [58] [John 5:46-47](#)
- [59] [Leviticus 18:22](#)
- [60] [Deuteronomy 18:10-13](#)
- [61] http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/profecias/esp_profecia10.htm (03/16)
- [62] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=J6bW0p7US-g> (accessed 03/2016)
- [63] [Ephesians 6:12](#) For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.
- [64] [Deuteronomy 25:13-16](#)
- [65] [Deuteronomy 27:15](#)
- [66] [Romans 1:23](#)
- [67] [Romans 1:25](#)
- [68] [Proverbs 6:16-19](#)
- [69] [Proverbs 3:32](#)
- [70] [Proverbs 15:9](#)
- [71] [Proverbs 16:5](#)
- [72] [Proverbs 17:15](#)
- [73] [Proverbs 28:9](#)
- [74] [Ezekiel 18:12-13](#)
- [75] [Ezekiel 22:11](#)
- [76] Dr. Tim Keller, *Where Imagination & Innovation Meet*, <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=kmNW7EtP6Xk> (accessed 03/2016)
- [77] [Colossians 3:5](#) (New Living Translation)

[78] [1Corinthians 6:9-11](#) (New Living Translation)

[79] [Luke 16:15](#)

[80] [Revelation 21:27](#)

[81] [John 8:44](#) Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is not truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

[82] [Zechariah 8:16](#) These are the things that ye shall do; Speak ye every man the truth to his neighbor; execute the judgment of truth and peace in your gates.

[83] [2Kings 23:22- 27](#)

Chapter 42

Will We Also Be Buried In Profound Obscurity?

A Comparison between Ancient Israel and Modern Day America

After King Josiah's death, four more kings rule for a short period of time in Jerusalem. The last king of what we would call ancient Israel is Zedekiah, the King of Judah, whom Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon, set up. But,

He (Zedekiah) did that which was evil in the sight of the Lord his God, and humbled not himself before Jeremiah the prophet speaking from the mouth of the Lord. And he also rebelled against King Nebuchadnezzar, who had made him swear by God: but he stiffened his neck, and hardened his heart from turning unto the Lord God of Israel. Moreover all the chief of the priests, and the people, transgressed very much after all the abominations of the heathen: and polluted the house of the Lord which he had hallowed in Jerusalem. And the Lord God of their fathers sent to them by his messengers, rising up betimes, and sending; because he had compassion on his people, and on his dwelling place; but they mocked the messengers of God, and despised his words, and misused his prophets, until the wrath of the Lord arose against his people, until there was no remedy.[\[1\]](#)

Therefore, God brought upon them the King of Babylon, who slew their young men with the sword in the house of their sanctuary, and had no compassion upon young man nor maiden, old man, or him that stooped for age: he gave them all into his hand.[\[2\]](#)

And they burnt the house of God, and brake down the wall of Jerusalem, and burnt all the palaces thereof with fire,

and destroyed all the goodly vessels thereof. And them that had escaped from the sword carried he away to Babylon; where they were servants to him and his sons until the reign of the kingdom of Persia.[\[3\]](#)

The destruction of Jerusalem occurred in 586 BC making the history of the southern kingdom of Judah from the time of King Saul to be around 450 years. It is interesting to note that although the Babylonians had a pantheistic religion and used divination and astrology, they did not practice child sacrifice. The divided kingdoms of Israel and Judah had adopted this practice from the Canaanites whom God had commanded them to remove from the land. They failed in their mission and in the end took on the ungodly practices of the Canaanites, which led to their own destruction.[\[4\]](#)

The reason I went through this brief history of Israel of old is to show the comparison or similarity between ancient Israel and the modern nation, the United States of America. Because of a few righteous men, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, God begins a relationship with the descendents of Israel. However, contrary to God's initial promise, over a period of time Israel's descendents are brought into bondage under an oppressive empire - Egypt, the world power of that day. They cry out to God for a deliverer and God sends them one, the man Moses. Through toil and suffering, Moses brings them forth as a nation into a new land.

They must overcome the native people living in that land, the Canaanites. But because of their obedience and righteousness, more than the nations around them, God blesses them. They become a rich and powerful nation called Israel under David and Solomon. But in their prosperity they forget God, and in disobedience turn to their own understanding. God sends them warning after warning that they have gone astray, but generally they refuse to listen. Until one day sudden destruction comes upon them and their nation is destroyed. They, too, are carried away captive by their enemies.

Similar to the ancient Israelites, many of the Pilgrim Fathers of the USA were religious peoples seeking religious freedom from the oppressive nations in Europe. Our Pilgrim Fathers, too, must have cried out to God for deliverance as many were being persecuted, marginalized and even killed for their faith in their European homelands. But God made a way of escape. Through much toil and suffering and danger, they cross the Atlantic Ocean, like the desert of Sinai, and God brings them forth into a new land.

They overcome the initial difficulties and God delivers them from the most powerful world empire of their day, England. They prosper, and become a new nation. As long as they obey God's voice and keep His commandments, they are blessed. But in their prosperity, they forgot their Maker and begin to serve and cleave unto other gods. They begin to do more outlandishly than even the nations that God destroyed before them.

In *Ezekiel* we read how the Lord would use Nebuchadnezzar as a razor to destroy Jerusalem. The Lord says,

Thus says the Lord God; This is Jerusalem: I have set it in the midst of the nations and countries that are round about her. And she hath changed my judgments into wickedness more than the nations, and my statutes more than the countries that are round about her: for they have refused my judgments and my statutes, they have not walked in them.

Therefore thus says the Lord God; Because ye multiplied more than the nations that are round about you, and have not walked in my statutes, neither have kept my judgments, neither have done according to the judgments of the nations that are round about you; Therefore thus says the Lord God; Behold, I, even I, am against thee, and will execute judgments in the midst of thee in the sight of the nations.

And I will do in thee that which I have not done, and whereunto I will not do any more the like, because of all thine abominations. Therefore the fathers shall eat the sons in the midst of thee, and the sons shall eat their fathers; and I will execute judgments in thee, and the whole remnant of thee will I scatter into all the winds. Wherefore, as I live, says the Lord God; Surely, because thou hast defiled my sanctuary with all thy detestable things, and with all thine abominations, therefore will I also diminish thee; neither shall mine eye spare, neither will I have any pity.[\[5\]](#)

[James Perloff](#), whom I mentioned in an earlier article, makes the same comparison between Israel of old and America in his book, *The Shadows of Power: The Council on Foreign Relations and the American Decline*. He writes,

Ancient Israel was founded as a land of God. It thrived and knew great power. But eventually it became engrossed with its material abundance, forgot the laws of God, grew weak, and was conquered, its people scattered abroad. Similarly, America was founded as a land of God, a Christian land. It became the freest and strongest nation on earth. But, like Biblical Israel, it too is losing sight of its religious roots, floundering in materialism. Will the United States also be conquered?[\[6\]](#)

Will America suffer the same short history as many nations before her? Daniel Webster, who lived from 1782 until 1852, the American orator and Secretary of State for three US Presidents, warned,

If there is anything in my thoughts or style to commend, the credit is one to my parents for instilling in me an early love of the Scriptures. If we abide by the principles taught in the Bible, our country will go on prospering and to prosper, but if we and our posterity neglect its instruction and authority, no man can tell how sudden a catastrophe

may overwhelm us and bury all our glory in profound obscurity.[\[7\]](#)

He also warned,

If religious books are not widely circulated among the masses in this country, I do not know what is going to become of us as a nation. If truth be not diffused, then error will be. If God and His Word are not known and received, the devil and his works will gain the ascendancy. If the evangelical volume does not reach every hamlet, the pages of a corrupt and licentious literature will. If the power of the gospel is not felt throughout the length and breadth of this land, anarchy and misrule, degradation and misery, corruption and darkness will reign without mitigation or end.[\[8\]](#)

Like the *Bible* verses quoted earlier,

The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God.[\[9\]](#) *But if they will not obey, I will utterly pluck up and destroy that nation, says the Lord.*[\[10\]](#)

Before ending this chapter, I want to digress to the words of Jeremiah the prophet, who lived during the last days before the destruction of Jerusalem. Jeremiah was called to his mission as “prophet of doom” in his youth. Because he exposes the sins of the nation, its leaders, as well as its people, Jeremiah is hated. If we listen to him carefully, many of the Lord's pronouncements against the kingdoms of Judah and Israel ring as warnings to America. Both Judah and Israel knew God, just as America as a nation has known God. In fact, after his visit to the United States in 1830s, Alexis de Tocqueville, the famous French political writer and thinker, said,

There is not a country in the world where the Christian religion retains a greater influence over the souls of men than in America.[\[11\]](#)

God called Jeremiah, *"a prophet unto the nations."*[\[12\]](#) He was not just a prophet to Israel of old, but to all nations, especially those nations who had the knowledge of God, and forgot Him. He is a prophet to us today in the United States of America. We will look at just a few of his warnings and see how his judgments against ancient Israel can be applied to America. Here's the first one.

And I brought you unto a plentiful country, to eat the fruit thereof and the goodness thereof; but when ye entered; ye defiled my land, and made mine heritage an abomination.[\[13\]](#)

In my *Bible*, the word *"defiled"* is footnoted as meaning *"ruined."* In a little less than four hundred years since the first Pilgrims arrived in New England in 1620, we have managed to ruin *"a plentiful country"* and its goodness. We have also ruined many countries around the world where our international corporations have helped to pollute and or destroy the natural habitat of those countries.

I am not going to go into a lengthy documentation of this fact, but I am sure you are not unaware of the growing "Green" movement worldwide. We could mention nuclear arms and nuclear energy plants as part of the defiling of the land. We could mention Monsanto's pesticides and herbicides used in farming which have entered into streams and ground water of America's water system.[\[14\]](#) The topic of pollution could be a long draw-out article, but that is not my object here, but just to draw similarities between ancient Israel and America today. The truth is that God's pronouncements against Israel apply to us today here in America.

Let's continue from *Jeremiah*:

The priest said not, Where is the Lord? and they that handled the law knew me not: the pastors also transgressed against me, and the prophets prophesied by Baal, and walked after things that do not profit.[\[15\]](#)

Where are the men of God admonishing us to get back to God? Where are the men of God telling us we are going down the wrong path? We do not want to hear it, but as Paul said, and I have mentioned in an earlier chapter:

For the time will come when they shall not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; and they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.[\[16\]](#)

Remember the definition from *Wikipedia*:

Itching ears is a term used in the Bible to describe individuals who seek out messages and doctrines that condones their own lifestyle, as opposed to adhering to the teachings of the apostles.[\[17\]](#)

You see Apostle Paul taught the whole counsel of God, not just the part that was easy to digest. He warned that after his death grievous or savage wolves would enter in as false pastors, not sparing or having mercy on the flock, and would speak perverse things, contrary to sound doctrine, drawing away disciples after them.[\[18\]](#)

But today, we want to hear a politically-correct Gospel that does not offend anyone. We do not want the whole counsel of God. It's too difficult to defend, and may give us persecution or cause us condemnation by others. Like Angelina Jolie, whose movie ***Unbroken*** talks about the power of forgiveness without talking about He who has the power to forgive us our sins. The film talks about forgiveness without talking about Jesus, the One who gives us power to forgive and to overcome. She forgets to tell us that it was the conversion of Louis Zamperni at a Billy Graham Crusade which helped Zamperni to overcome alcoholism and find the power of Christ to forgive. We want the gift, without the Giver. We want to talk about love, without talking about the source of that love, Jesus Christ.[\[19\]](#)

When I as a youth in the early 1970s had my epiphany experience and a Super-natural love flooded into my being, I knew that “love” was the answer. But my first question naturally was, where does this love come from? Was this what Jesus was all about? I began my search for the source of that all-empowering love, a love that changed me from a introspective, depressive, pessimistic youth into a happy, outgoing, optimistic person. Because at that time I had rejected Catholicism and Protestantism, I searched through other “isms.” But I did not find the answer in Eric Fromm’s love psychology. Nor did I find it in the “*Be Here Now*” of Transcendental Meditation. It wasn’t in Siddhartha’s “Eight-fold Path,” or in yoga, organic foods, or Judaism. I found *some* truths in each one of these, but not *the truth*.

It was not until November 7th, 1971 when the two hitch-hikers I picked up coming out of Columbus, Ohio led me in the sinner’s prayer and I accepted Jesus as my Savior and asked Him into my heart that I finally found the source of love, Jesus Christ. That same day I prayed that the Holy Spirit would lead and guide me into all truth. It was at that point where I began to read and study the *Bible*, especially the Words of Jesus in the *Gospels*. I fell in love with Jesus and hungrily devoured and absorbed His Word. I was as a new born babe desiring the sincere milk of the Word as Peter so aptly phrased.[\[20\]](#) It was that prayer and that constant study of God’s Word and applying it to my life which has led me to the conclusions I am presenting to you today, the conclusion that Jesus is indeed the Way, the Truth and the Life.[\[21\]](#)

If you are interested in the subject of God’s warnings to ancient Israel, read and study the book of *Jeremiah* in the *Bible* and apply its judgments and condemnations to America, a nation that knew God and was blessed because of it.

General Douglas MacArthur noted,

History fails to record a single precedent in which nations subject to moral decay have not passed into economic and political decline. There has either been a spiritual awakening to overcome the moral lapse, or a progressive deterioration leading to ultimate national disaster.[22]

America, as well as every other nation that forgets God, is and shall continue to suffer the consequences of rejecting the truth found in God's Word. We as a nation and as a world are headed for destruction because of the hardening of our hearts to Biblical truth.

As writer and speaker Des Griffin explains,

If the United States, as a nation, was not judged for its willful rebellion and its violation to His laws, God would not be God. That judgment (spiritually, financially, socially, politically, etc.) is as certain as the rising of tomorrow's sun. It's not a matter of if that judgment comes, it's only a matter of when. God is not mocked. What we have sown we will also reap.[23]

The late Billy Graham gave the same warning. And what about you, will you turn to God with all your heart, mind and soul? Or will you continue wandering in no-man's land on the eve of destruction? Jesus is only a prayer away. Call upon Him. He will not disappoint you, but will lead you in the Way, the Truth and the Life. He's promised to, if you seek Him with all your heart. He says,

Call upon me and I will answer you.[\[24\]](#)

And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart.[\[25\]](#)

Notes:

[1] [2Chronicles 36:12-16](#)

- [2] [2Chronicles 36:18](#)
- [3] [2Chronicles 36:19-20](#)
- [4] <http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/articles/10937-moloch-molech>
- [5] [Ezekiel 5:5-11](#)(Read [Ezekiel 5:1-4](#) also.)
- [6] [James Perloff](#), *Shadows of Power: The Council on Foreign Relations and the American Decline*, Western Islands Publishers, Appleton, Wisconsin, 1988, p. 221
https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=j_gjluZ6194
- [7] http://www.goodreads.com/author/quotes/31180.Daniel_Webster
- [8] [Ibid](#)
- [9] [Psalm 9:17](#)
- [10] [Jeremiah 12:17](#)
- [11] Rodney Stark, *The Victory of Reason: How Christianity Led to Freedom, Capitalism, and Western Success*, Random House, New York, 2005, pg. 209.
- [12] [Jeremiah 1:5](#) Before I formed thee in the belly, I knew thee; and before thou came forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and ordained thee a prophet unto the nations.
- [13] [Jeremiah 2:7](#)
- [14] <http://pubs.usgs.gov/fs/2006/3028/> (accessed 03/2016)
- [15] [Jeremiah 2:8](#)
- [16] [2Timothy 4:3-4](#)
- [17] http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Itching_ears (accessed 03/2016)
- [18] [Acts 20:27-30](#) Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood. For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock. Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.
- [19] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=XrjJbl7kRrI>(accessed 03/16)
- [20] [1Peter 2:2](#) As new born babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby.
- [21] [John 14:6](#) Jesus says unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.
- [22] General Douglas MacArthur, cited by Des Griffin, *Fourth Reich of the Rich*, Emissary Publications, 1976, pg.244.
- [23] Des Griffin, *Fourth Reich of the Rich*, Emissary Publications, 1976, pg.244.
- [24] [Jeremiah 33:3](#)
- [25] [Jeremiah 29:13](#)

Chapter 43

Paul's Understanding and Vision for a New Nation – the New Jew Theology

Apostle Paul, understanding the prophecies of [Isaiah](#) that God is calling out a new group of believers scattered among the Gentile nations, brings the message of salvation to them and begins to call them, the new Gentile converts, the people of God.[\[1\]](#) In writing to the Christian believers in Rome he says,

For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: but he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.[\[2\]](#)

In his letter to the *Galatians*, Paul likens the new Gentile believers to Isaac, the seed of Sarah, or the seed of faith. He likens the physical Jewish nation to Ishmael, the seed of Agar, the father of the Arab nations, and the seed of the flesh.

For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman. But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the freewoman was by promise. Which things are an allegory: for these are two covenants; the one from mount Sinai, which genders to bondage, which is Agar.[\[3\]](#)

For this Agar is Mount Sinai in Arabia, and answers to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children. But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all. For it is written, Rejoice thou barren that bears not; break forth and cry, thou that travails not: for the desolate has many more children than she which has an husband. Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the

children of promise. But as then he was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so it is now.[\[4\]](#)

Paul was receiving persecution from the non-Christian Jews, but also criticism from the converted Jews who still thought it necessary to keep the **Laws of Moses**. In **Galatians**, Paul talks about the incident which happened in Antioch where Apostle Peter had been eating and drinking with the converted Gentiles. However, upon the arrival of some of the converted Jews from Jerusalem who still also kept the **Law**, Peter withdrew himself. We will read from **Galatians**:

But when Peter was come up to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed. For before that certain came from James (in Jerusalem), he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision (which had come from Jerusalem), and the other Jews dissembled likewise with him; insomuch that Barnabas also was carried with their dissimulation.[\[5\]](#)

But when I saw that they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, If thou, being a Jew, lives after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compel thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?[\[6\]](#)

Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.[\[7\]](#)

I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness comes by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.[\[8\]](#)

Paul is very strongly telling us that if we could save ourselves by obedience to religious laws, then Christ died for nothing. Paul was strongly against the circumcision movement in Jerusalem, which believed in keeping the **Law**, while accepting Christ. It was Paul's compromise with James on this very point which led to his arrest in Jerusalem, which we can read in the book of **Acts**. Even though various prophets have warned Paul about the dangers that await him in Jerusalem, Paul is set on the visit.

And when we were come to Jerusalem, the brethren received us gladly. And the day following Paul went in with us unto James; and all the elders were present. And when he had saluted them, he declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministry. And when they heard it they glorified the Lord, and said unto him, Thou sees, brother, how many thousands of Jews there are which believe; and they are zealous of the law: And they are informed of thee, that thou teaches all the Jews which are among the Gentiles to forsake Moses, saying they ought not to circumcise their children, neither to walk after the customs.[\[9\]](#)

Paul was actually teaching the law of Christ instead of the Laws of Moses, and should have stood his ground and defended his stand. But in this case, even the great Apostle Paul shows himself to be as human as Peter. Under the pressure of James, the brother of Jesus, who was then the head of the Jerusalem church, Paul compromised and agreed to show that he also walked orderly according to the Law.

Do therefore this that we say to thee: We have four men which have a vow on them; Them take, and purify thyself with them, and be at charges with them, that they may shave their heads: and all may know that those things, whereof they were informed of thee, are nothing; but that thou thyself also walks orderly, and keeps the law.[\[10\]](#)

Perhaps Paul was hoping that by doing so he would have more of a chance to share the truth of the Gospel with the Law-keeping Jewish Christians in Jerusalem. Like he confessed later:

And unto the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law; To them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ,) that I might gain them that are without law. To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.[\[11\]](#)

But he never gets the chance in person. Paul's compromise leads to a riot and eventually to his arrest by the Roman authorities. How could Paul get it so wrong when he had been warned twice on his trip to Jerusalem to not continue, and the last time he had been in Jerusalem his enemies had sought to kill him?[12] Why did Paul continue on to Jerusalem when God seemed to saying "don't go?" Here's what had happened.

When he arrived in Tyre on the coast of modern Lebanon the disciples there

said to Paul through the Spirit, that he should not go up to Jerusalem.[\[13\]](#)

But Paul is intent on going to Jerusalem, so he doesn't listen. Finally landing at Caesarea on the coast of northern Israel another disciple bound his own hands and feet with Paul's belt and said,

Thus says the Holy Ghost, So shall the Jews in Jerusalem bind the man that owns this girdle, and shall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.[\[14\]](#)

Immediately Paul's companions and friends beseech him not go up to Jerusalem. But Paul insists and they yield to his desire, committing him to the Lord's will.[\[15\]](#)

Why did God allow Paul to make such a mistake, a mistake that will cost Paul his freedom and eventually his life? Did God have a greater purpose and he allowed Paul to get it wrong in order to accomplish that purpose?

What has been Paul's greatest ministry over the ages? Were his witnessing events in Asia Minor his greatest accomplishments? Surely they were great events and their recording in the book of *Acts* has been a motivation to followers of Christ through the ages to get out and do the same. So why did God let Paul get it wrong and end up with his head on the chopping block?

In the end, what was Paul's greatest ministry? Could it be that God wanted Paul to spend more time writing, to save his experiences for all eternity in the written word? As long as Paul was a freeman, he wouldn't stay put. He was constantly witnessing, preaching, teaching, and instructing wherever he went. He had no time to put it down on paper for all prosperity. He barely had time to sleep.

God had to let Paul mistakenly go back to Jerusalem, where he already had had problems. He had to let him compromise with James and agree to show that he was still obedient to the Law, which Paul had consistently preached against. Why did God let it happen? The answer is God had a greater purpose.

God gets some of His greatest victories out of seeming defeats and He often brings us along the neglected path of praise in the process. Paul's capture and imprisonment pushed him into a new ministry, a ministry that until then he was leaving for Luke to fulfill.

God knew the future and knew that Paul's writing ministry would be his greatest and most important legacy. Paul's ministry of the written Word resulted in much of the New Testament and was an impetus for Matthew, Peter and John to get their Gospel stories down in print. Could that have been God's final purpose in

allowing Paul to blow it, because He wanted to get Paul to write? God knew we today would be encouraged, strengthened and edified by His Word through Paul. God knew the power of the written word and he needed Paul to sit down and write.

To summarize this chapter on Paul's "New Jew" theology, we see in *Galatians* Paul likening the Jewish nation after the flesh to the sons of Agar, the bondwoman of Abraham who brought forth the Arab nations. He likens the newly-converted Gentile Christians to the sons of Sarah the freewoman and real wife of Abraham who brought forth the seed of faith.

Nevertheless what says the scripture? Cast out the bondwoman and her son: for the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the freewoman. So then, brethren, we are not the children of the bondwoman, but of the free.[\[16\]](#)

The Gentile Christians who are not keeping the Laws of Moses but Christ's law of love, and are justified only by faith in Christ, are the children of Abraham, the children of faith. As Cain persecuted Abel, as Esau with Jacob, the false church has always persecuted the true believers.

But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so it is now.[\[17\]](#)

Paul goes on to say,

And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heir's according to the promise.[\[18\]](#) *For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision avails anything, nor uncircumcision; but faith which works by love. For, brethren, you have been called unto liberty; only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another. For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even this; Thou shall love thy neighbor as thyself.*[\[19\]](#)

But if you be led of the Spirit, you are not under the law.[\[20\]](#)

Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, sedition, heresies, envying, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have told you in times past, that they that do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.[\[21\]](#)

Paul is calling us not to be rule-keeping religious people, but Spirit-filled believers motivated by Jesus' law of love. Which will we be, rule-keeping religious people, or love-filled Children of God?

Before going on to the next chapter, I need to discuss another aspect of Paul's "New Jew" theology. According to Paul, the Israel of God is no longer the Jew after the flesh, but the new Jew, the reborn child of God, the true Christians who follow Jesus with heart, soul, body and mind. Many Christians, especially in America, have not seemed to have gotten the point, that the Israel of God, the people of God, are the true believing followers of Christ. I have heard many pastors and Christian leaders quote God's Promise to Abraham from *Genesis*:

And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curses thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.[\[22\]](#)

In this promise we see God wanted the Jewish people to be a blessing to the world. He wanted them to be an example of a nation that loved and followed God's Ways and Laws. He wanted

them to help other nations to learn of God and prepare their hearts and minds for the coming of the Redeemer, Christ our Lord. But as a nation they failed. Though a remnant became the new believers in Christ and started Christianity, their nation's leadership rejected Christ and taught the people the same. They therefore lost their position as God's people.

Most American pastors still assume that God is talking about flesh-and-blood Israel in the above quote, and He was, until the time of Christ. With Christ's coming and with many of the Jewish leadership rejecting His message, God had to call out a new group of believers, those who would accept and follow the teaching of Jesus Christ. As Paul has so convincingly argued, the true believing Christians are the new Israel of God.

If the nation of flesh-and-blood Israel is no longer God's chosen nation, then they should not have special privileges or allowances. American foreign policy should not be so overhandedly pro-Israeli. However, American pastors, using *Scofield's Reference Bible*, which I will comment more on in a later chapter, have been deceived into believing that even though the Jewish nation rejected Christ, they have still somehow kept their privileged status. Politicians have also accepted the pro-Israeli position.

It is true that Paul mentioned in *Romans* that the time would come when a remnant of the flesh-and-blood Jews who have been in blindness to Christ shall be saved.[\[23\]](#) No doubt, it will take the horrific period of the Great Tribulation with the Antichrist's persecution of religious peoples to turn the Christ-rejecting Jew to Jesus. But some have already accepted Christ and they make great disciples. Their extraordinary natural gifts often make them head-and-shoulders above their brethren for both good, when they are yielded to God's spirit, and bad, when they are not.

Jesus called the religious leaders who rejected His Message the children of the Devil.[\[24\]](#) Jesus said they did not hear His Words,

because they were not of God.[25] In His last discourse before His Passion, Jesus blasts the scribes and Pharisees over and over again, calling them hypocrites, avarice, fools, blind, legalists, superficial, serpents, and vipers; who seek the praise of men more than the praise of God.[26]

In *Revelation* Jesus calls them “*the synagogue of Satan.*” He says,

I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.[27]

When talking to the body of Christian believers in Philadelphia, which means brotherly-love, Jesus makes the following comment,

Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.[28]

Here we see Jesus confirming all that Paul has so methodically explained to us. They are both teaching the same message. The Christ hating, Christ rejecting Jew has no special place in God’s Kingdom unless, or until, he changes, humbles himself and receives the life giving love of Christ. All who humble themselves before Christ and call upon His name shall have the gift of eternal life.[29]

Notes:

[1] <http://www.messiahrevealed.org/all-people.html>

[2] [Romans 2:28-29](#)

[3] [Galatians 4:22-24](#)

[4] [Galatians 4:25-29](#)

[5] [Galatians 2:11-13](#)

[6] [Galatians 2:14](#)

[7] [Galatians 2:16](#)

[8] [Galatians 2:21](#)

[9] [Acts 21:17-21](#)

- [10] [Acts 21:23-24](#)
- [11] [1Corinthians 9:20-22](#)
- [12] [Acts 9:29](#) And he spoke boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him.
- [13] [Acts 21:4](#)
- [14] [Acts 21:11](#)
- [15] [Acts 21:12-14](#) And when we heard these things, both we, and they of that place, besought him not to go up to Jerusalem. Then Paul answered, What mean ye to weep and to break mine heart? for I am ready not to be bound only, but also to die at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus. And when he would not be persuaded, we ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done.
- [16] [Galatians 4:30-31](#)
- [17] [Galatians 4:29](#)
- [18] [Galatians 3:29](#)
- [19] [Galatians 5:6-14](#)
- [20] [Galatians 5:18](#)
- [21] [Galatians 5:19-23](#)
- [22] [Genesis 12:2-3](#)
- [23] [Romans 11:25-26](#) For I would not, brethren, that ye be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fullness of the Gentiles be come in...
- [24] [John 8:44](#) Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do...
- [25] [John 8:47](#) He that is of God, hears God's words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.
- [26] [Matthew 23:1-39](#)
- [27] [Revelation 2:9](#)
- [28] [Revelation 3:9](#)
- [29] [Romans 10:13](#) For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.

Chapter 44

Jesus and a New Spiritual Israel! More than Overcomers!

In the last chapter, I touched on how Jesus' view of the New Israel was the same as the Apostle Paul's. Let's look at Jesus' comments in greater detail. In *John*, the scribes and Pharisees bring unto Jesus a woman who was found "*taken in adultery, in the very act.*"[\[1\]](#) The scribes and Pharisees want to condemn her to death by stoning, which was written in the *Law of Moses*. But Jesus says unto them,

He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.[\[2\]](#)

And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.[\[3\]](#)

An interesting point here is that the older men were the first to be convicted by their conscience. The younger men in the height of their zeal felt more justified in condemning the woman to death and were ready to cast the stone to fulfill the Law. But the older men, worn down through the toils of life and aware of their own shortcomings, failures and sins, and knowing that their own lives were coming to an end, were conscious of their own necessity of receiving forgiveness.

I recently read about an incident that occurred at the end of Field Marshal Bernard Montgomery's life. Montgomery was the highest British commander in World War II. He fought under Eisenhower and with Patton against the Germans in the invasion of Europe. At 88 years of age, nearing the end of his life, Montgomery was unable to sleep. In desperation he asked for his

closest friend to be called for. When his friend arrived, Montgomery confessed he was unable to sleep because he knew he was soon going to face God. His conscience was weighing heavy upon him and he had no idea how he was going to justify the death of all those young lads in the war, lads who had gone to their deaths because of Montgomery's decisions. His conscience was causing him to seek God, to seek God's forgiveness.[4] No doubt, those older Pharisees were sensing the same feeling.

Paul tells us that in the Latter Days men shall be past feeling, their conscience seared with a hot iron.[5] In other words, they will not have a conscience to tell them that they are doing wrong. Their conscience will be hardened. Jesus Himself said men's hearts would grow cold because of the abundance of iniquity.[6] Was He talking about the world we have today?

In the incident with the woman taken in adultery, Jesus tells the Pharisees or religious rulers that they are judging after the flesh. He tells them they are not behaving as children of Abraham because they are seeking to kill Him,

a man who has told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham.[7]

They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father.

Jesus said unto them, If you were Abraham's children, you would do the works of Abraham.[8]

Jesus goes on and says,

You do the deeds of your father.

Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God.

Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, you would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. Why do you not understand my speech? even because you cannot hear my word. You are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father you will do.[\[9\]](#)

He that is of God hears God's words, you therefore hear them not, because you are not of God.[\[10\]](#)

Jesus is showing that the children of the flesh are not really the children of God. It is the children of the Spirit who listen, hear and obey God's Word and God's voice of conscience in their heart, who are the real children of faith. As we find in ***Hebrews***,

For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them (Israel according to the flesh): but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.[\[11\]](#)

In ***Jeremiah*** we read,

For we have sinned against the Lord our God, we and our fathers, from our youths even unto this day, and have not obeyed the voice of the Lord our God.[\[12\]](#)

In other words, we haven't obeyed the voice of conscience, God's voice within our hearts. The point I am trying to make here is as Jesus said,

The flesh profits nothing.[\[13\]](#)

God's Kingdom is not a flesh-and-blood kingdom, but a spiritual Kingdom of those born of the spirit. One night during Jesus' ministry, a ruler of the Jews who was member of the Sanhedrin came to Jesus secretly to know Him more intimately or

up close and personal, as we say today. Let us read from the *Gospel of John*.

There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.

Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

Nicodemus says unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?[\[14\]](#)

Jesus begins talking to Nicodemus about the importance of the spiritual birth. Nicodemus does not seem to be getting the point, even though he is an important religious leader and member of the Jewish Sanhedrin, their “Supreme Court.”

Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.[\[15\]](#)

Here Jesus is making a comparison between the two types of birth; the physical or water birth and the spiritual birth. It behooves us to seek for God. God promises that if we seek for Him with all our hearts, we shall find Him.[\[16\]](#)

Jesus said we should

hunger and thirst after righteousness.[\[17\]](#)

He goes on to say to Nicodemus.

The wind blows where it lists, and thou hears the sound thereof, but cannot tell whence it comes, and whither it goes: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

Nicodemus answered and said unto Him, How can these things be?

Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and know not these things? [\[18\]](#)

Have you experienced that birth of the Spirit? Paul tells us:

Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, everything is made new. [\[19\]](#)

Jesus said,

Behold, I stand at the door and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. [\[20\]](#)

Are you longing for personal fellowship with a love that will never let you go, never disappoint you, never leave you, nor forsake you? [\[21\]](#) Then call upon the name of the Lord,

For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. [\[22\]](#)

You could say a little prayer like the following from your heart:

Jesus, I need Your help. I have gotten to the point that I just cannot go on any more. Please, reach down and touch me. Cleanse me from those things that are offensive in my life, where I have screwed up. Make me know. Give me a new start and a new heart. In Jesus' name. I pray.

If you'd prayed that little pray or one like it, God has promised to answer and come into your heart, your life. As you draw closer to Him, He will manifest Himself unto you.

Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you.[\[23\]](#)

Back in the 60s and 70s we used to sing the song [We Shall Overcome](#). You can watch Joan Baez's rendition at the following link.[\[24\]](#) The song was originally a Christian spiritual song by the Black Americans as they peacefully waited to overcome the injustice of their servitude. One of the lines of the song says, "*We shall live in peace one day.*" The youth of the 60s used the song as a protest against the war in Vietnam and the Godless materialistic society we found ourselves in. Our hope was that one day the world would live in peace.

However, man has shown time and time again that he is incapable of living in peace and harmony. Man cannot have peace without peace on the inside, without peace of heart, peace of mind and peace of spirit. He cannot find peace within himself because he is troubled with doubt, anguished with his own inability to always be good and do good. Like the great Apostle Paul said,

For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that do I... Who shall deliver me from the bondage of this death?[\[25\]](#)

But Paul, the murderer and persecutor of the new religious sect, found the answer. He says,

I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord.[\[26\]](#)

It's only by letting the love of God in our hearts in His Son Jesus that we can overcome, overcome our selfishness, overcome our lack of love, overcome our depression, overcome our fears and anxieties, overcome our anger, overcome our pains, overcome our murmurings, overcome our failures and overcome our sins.

Jesus has overcome and He offers us His overcoming grace, His overcoming Holy Spirit, His overcoming love, His overcoming forgiveness. But without Him, we are nothing and will accomplish nothing of real value.[\[27\]](#) But with Him all things are possible.[\[28\]](#)

Have you got that overcoming “feeling,” God’s Spirit, down in your heart? Call out to Jesus, because through Him, you can overcome! He says,

To him that overcomes will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.[\[29\]](#) He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death.[\[30\]](#) To him that overcomes will I give power over the nations.[\[31\]](#) He that overcomes shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.[\[32\]](#)

John the Apostle tells us:

Who is he that overcomes the world, but he that believes that Jesus is the Son of God?[\[33\]](#)

Do you want to be an over-comer? Then let God’s overcoming Spirit into your life through the Lord Jesus Christ, and you can become as Paul said

Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors, (in other words, more than overcomers), through him that loved us. For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.[\[34\]](#)

Join the team! Overcome!

Notes:

- [1] [John 8:4](#)
- [2] [John 8:7](#)
- [3] [John 8:9](#)
- [4] Spufford, Francis; *Unapologetic: Why, Despite Everything, Christianity can still make Surprising Emotional Sense*; by Faber and Faber Limited, London, 2013; pages 39-42.
- [5] [1Timothy 4:2](#) Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron.
- [6] [Matthew 24:12](#) And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.
- [7] [John 8:40](#)
- [8] [John 8:39](#)
- [9] [John 8:41-44](#)
- [10] [John 8:47](#)
- [11] [Hebrews 4:2](#)
- [12] [Jeremiah 3:25](#)
- [13] [John 6:63](#) It is the spirit that quickens; the flesh profits nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.
- [14] [John 3:1-4](#)
- [15] [John 3:5-7](#)
- [16] [Jeremiah 29:13](#)
- [17] [Matthew 5:6](#) Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.
- [18] [John 3:8-10](#)
- [19] [2Corinthians 5:17](#)
- [20] [Revelation 3:20](#)
- [21] [Hebrews 13:5](#)
- [22] [Romans 10:13](#)
- [23] [James 4:8](#)
- [24] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=nM39QUiAsoM> (accessed 06/2016)
- [25] [Romans 7:19-24](#)
- [26] [Romans 7:25](#) I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.
- [27] [John 15:5](#) I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abides in me, and I in him, the same brings forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.
- [28] [Matthew 19:26](#) But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible.
- [29] [Revelation 2:7](#) He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcomes will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

- [30] [Revelation 2:11](#) He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death.
- [31] [Revelation 2:26](#) And he that overcomes, and keeps my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations.
- [32] [Revelation 21:7](#)
- [33] [1John 5:5](#)
- [34] [Romans 8:37-39](#)

Chapter 45

What About the Ten Commandment and Jewish Festivals and Kosher Eating Laws?

Some people like a religion of rules and regulation and church services etc. But the law of Christ^[1] is above all that and says we should be motivated by love in all we do. We are no longer under a ***Don't Do*** religion, but a ***Do*** religion: go sell all you have and give to the poor,^[2] go into all the world and preach the gospel,^[3] love your enemies, do good to them that hate you, pray for them that despitefully use you and persecute you,^[4] heal the sick,^[5] cast out devils, freely you have received freely give.^[6]

But most people like to feel righteous so they would rather have a ***Don't Do*** religion and then they can feel justified because they didn't break the Ten Commandments and didn't break the kosher laws and have kept the Sabbath. Let's read from *Isaiah 58*.

Cry aloud, spare not, lift up thy voice like a trumpet, and show my people their transgression, and the house of Jacob their sins.

Yet they seek me daily, and delight to know my ways, as a nation that did righteousness, and forsook not the ordinance of their God: they ask of me the ordinances of justice; they take delight in approaching to God. ^[7]

Even though we as a nation have forsaken the ordinances of God in our hearts and minds, we still in our religious services make an appearance of approaching God.

Wherefore have we fasted, say they, and You see not? wherefore have we afflicted our soul, and You take no knowledge? Behold, in the day of your fast ye find pleasure, and exact all your labours. ^[8]

We take pleasure in our apparent fasting, in our religious exercise and we wonder why God doesn't seem to answer our prayers. We go to prayer groups and Bible studies and even stop watching TV, but still God doesn't seem to respond.

Behold, ye fast for strife and debate, and to smite with the fist of wickedness: ye shall not fast as ye do this day, to make your voice to be heard on high. Is it such a fast that I have chosen? a day for a man to afflict his soul? is it to bow down his head as a bulrush, and to spread sackcloth and ashes under him? wilt thou call this a fast, and an acceptable day to the LORD? [9]

I've visited some churches where they make a big exercise in "fasting" foods for a week in order to pray for a need for the church. The Lord goes on to explain what He really is looking for.

Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou see the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh? [10]

It seems the Lord is more interested in our helping others than in our abstaining from eating food. In other words, He is telling us we need to break open our hardened hearts and get involved with the poor, the needy, the oppressed and even our own family members who need our help. If we do so, He says,

Then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thine health shall spring forth speedily: and thy righteousness shall go before thee; the glory of the LORD shall be thy reward. [11]

If we do take care of those afflicted, God is promising to be a light unto us. He is promising health and that His presence itself will be our reward.

Then shalt thou call, and the LORD shall answer; thou shalt cry, and he shall say, Here I am. If thou take away from the midst of thee the yoke, the putting forth of the finger, and speaking vanity; And if thou draw out thy soul to the hungry, and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall thy light rise in obscurity and thy darkness be as the noon day: [\[12\]](#)

Did you hear that? If we draw out our soul to those in need, both physically and spiritually, He promises to enlighten our path.

And the LORD shall guide thee continually, and satisfy thy soul in drought, and make fat thy bones: and thou shalt be like a watered garden, and like a spring of water, whose waters fail not. And they that shall be of thee shall build the old waste places: thou shalt raise up the foundations of many generations; and thou shalt be called, The repairer of the breach, The restorer of paths to dwell in. [\[13\]](#)

Wow, what promises.

If thou turn away thy foot from the sabbath, from doing thy pleasure on my holy day; and call the sabbath a delight, the holy of the LORD, honourable; and shalt honour him, not doing thine own ways, nor finding thine own pleasure, nor speaking thine own words: Then shalt thou delight thyself in the LORD; and I will cause thee to ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed thee with the heritage of Jacob thy father: for the mouth of the LORD hath spoken it. [\[14\]](#)

In other words, if we really put the Lord first and love Him with all our heart, our mind, and strength, He will bless us. He

wants our “fasting” to in fact be service for the poor and downtrodden. If we do that, then He is going to be with us. There is something about helping the poor that God blesses. Rather than “approaching unto God” in our church services, He would have us out serving first those in need. Then He promises to hear our prayers and give His presence to us, which is a reward in itself. Self-righteous religious church service and rule-keeping, is not what God wants. Love is above all those other things.[\[15\]](#) Maybe that’s why Apostle James says,

Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and the widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.
[\[16\]](#)

Each fellowship has their rules and regulations, but they must remember that most of those rules are ones that they have decided are important and therefore they follow them. The trouble comes in when they try to use God's Word to justify the rules they wish for their congregation to keep, and condemn others who don't. We do not need more rules. We need more people getting out loving others into the Kingdom of God. If our rules and regulations are not motivating us to love others then what good are they, but to make us feel righteous before God. Yet our righteousness is nothing but stinking menstrual cloth in God's eyes.[\[17\]](#)

The conflict between grace versus works has been the raging religious controversy since the time of Cain and Abel to the present.[\[18\]](#) Abel's simple obedience pleased God and showed that obedience is what God wants, not sacrifice.[\[19\]](#) Cain wanted to show his righteousness by his own works. He was not humble enough to obey God and sacrifice the lamb God desired, symbolic of the Lamb of God that was to come in Christ. No, he wanted to do it his way, like Frank Sinatra's song, *I Did It My Way!*[\[20\]](#) Cain would offer a sacrifice of the works of his own hands.[\[21\]](#) Here's the problem: Abel an honest sinner was willing to obey God and depended on God's righteousness to save him.

Cain thought he was righteous enough since he was hard working, much more so than his brother who did nothing but watch sheep all day. Thus we see the beginning of the battle royal between those who believe in God's righteousness, that God alone can save them, and those who believe God needs some help from us and prefer to trust in their own righteousness to save them.

I would rather stand with Mary Magdalena[\[22\]](#), Rahab[\[23\]](#), Ruth,[\[24\]](#) Tamar,[\[25\]](#) David, Paul, and the prophets who stood by faith alone in God's righteousness to save them and keep them saved. My own righteousness fails me many times a day. If righteousness comes through our rule keeping, kosher laws and church attendance and services then Christ has died in vain. Jesus alone, He is all I need! That's what Paul argued.

But the whole point is that the law of love is in fact more than the Ten Commandments. Instead of **NOT** lying and **NOT** killing and **NOT** stealing etc, which obviously you will not do if you are walking in love, it's about treating others how you would want to be treated in any given situation.[\[26\]](#) We now have a **Proactive** religion instead of a **Don't Do** religion. That's why the **Bible** says that love is the fulfillment of the law.[\[27\]](#) By walking in love for those in need Jesus showed us that love was higher than the law.

We as sincere Christians have graduated from the old school, or at least we should have. But a lot of people would prefer to have a **Don't Do** religion and feel righteous in their don't doing, rather than a **Proactive** religion which motivates them to get out and help others. Not only does the book of **Galatians** talk about this, but **Romans** and **Hebrews** and **James** and **John**. By reading the gospels if you look carefully you find the *Son of Man* breaking the Sabbath,[\[28\]](#)[\[29\]](#)[\[30\]](#) just like the high priest would do and be guiltless.

We shouldn't be striving to keep the *Ten Commandments*, but we should be striving to keep the *New Commandment*;^[31] to love and treat others as we would want to be treated.^[32] We should be striving to keep the commandment of forgiveness,^[33] of giving unto others,^[34] of preaching the gospel, of loving our enemy, of doing good to those that hate us,^[35] of helping the widow and the orphan and the poor,^[36] of speaking the truth in love with our neighbor,^[37] of not loving money^[38] nor material things,^[39] and of walking humbly before our God.

By accenting the *Ten Commandments* we're going back to kindergarten. When we should be those that can take meat, we are still feeding on the milk.^[40] But many churches teach this sort of stuff and it's a shame. God wants more than our *don't* doing. He wants to come into our lives and make us vessels He can use to love and help others.^[41] It's more complicated, and most people don't want complications.

You see the focus is different. Apostle Paul says, do not use our liberty as an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another.^[42] The focus is on love and helping others,^[43] being proactive, getting out witnessing^[44] and helping the poor, etc. It's loving service for others! Jesus took following God to a different level and Paul seemed to get the point more than any of the disciples. He tells us that love is a more excellent way!^[45] Some people call it *Old Testament Christianity* vs. *New Testament Christianity*.

The Apostles Peter and James in Jerusalem had to compromise to please the many Jews who converted and still kept the law.^[46] Apostle Paul was out with the Gentiles and though the Jews persecuted him wherever he went he preferred to convert the Gentiles and make new bottles out of them instead of trying to pour new wine into old bottles.^[47]^[48] When Paul did go back to Jerusalem and compromised with James on the principle of grace verses works, Paul ended up losing his head.^[49] But nevertheless, we got all those beautiful epistles to read

because of it. God does get great victories out of seeming defeats.[50]

Search the scriptures for in them you think you have eternal life,[51] and the scriptures, if read and studied with an open heart and mind, will lead us to these conclusions. We need to ask God by His ***Holy Spirit*** to open our eyes to the wonderful things contained in His Word.[52] The ***Holy Spirit*** promises to lead and guide us into all truth.[53] Could the ***Holy Spirit*** be speaking through these words right now?

When I had my God experience, I found out that God was love,[54] and that love was the answer. At that moment, I was able to go home and apologize to my father whom I had not spoken to for various years due to a physical fight we had had. It was not rules that motivated me to change, but was God's Spirit of love working in my heart. From my reading of the Gospels I see Jesus going around doing good and breaking the religious rules over and over again. Is He purposely doing so to try to help us to get the point that it is not in that direction?[55] The letter kills but the spirit gives life.[56]

The debate between grace and works is similar to the evolution/creation controversy, where both sides look at the same evidence and come up with totally different conclusions. Just like the evolutionists cannot understand the creationists view point because "***they are spiritually discerned***,"[57] the brethren that still want to keep the law,

have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge. For you being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish your own righteousness, have not submitted yourself unto the righteousness of God. For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to everyone that believes.[58]

Jesus has saved me and Jesus will keep me saved. It is none of my own self-righteousness.[59]

Every church has their rules as every club does. But let us not confuse church or denomination rules with God's Law. Many churches give lip service to Salvation by grace[60] but in fact have a mixture of grace and works. The obligating of the Sabbath and kosher and Ten Commandments Laws is actually a mixture of grace and works. Jesus saves me, but I need to keep myself saved? Sorry, I can't do it. I couldn't save myself, nor am I able to keep myself saved by a keeping of some old religious rules that could never save in the first place.[61][62] The rules were meant to show us that we are incapable of saving ourselves and are completely dependent on the love and mercy of God.

The law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto to Christ that we might be justified by faith.[63]

That if it be by grace, then is it no more works, otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace, otherwise work is no more work.[64]

For me, I am totally dependent on the complete mercy and love of God. My own righteousness is stinking filthy rags.[65] Sorry, fellows, some of us do not understand salvation yet. We are still trying to save ourselves, even though we say we are not. Maybe it's the self-righteous feeling we get by rule keeping, that blinds us to the simple truth of the Gospel. But brethren, we have a new and a better covenant.[66] It's just so simple that many miss it. What about you?

Notes:

[1] [Galatians 2:16](#)

[2] [Matthew 19:21](#)

[3] [Mark 16:15](#)

[4] [Matthew 5:44](#)

[5] [Mark 16:16](#)

[6] [Matthew 10:8](#)

[7] Isaiah 58:1-2

[8] Isaiah 58:3

[9] Isaiah 58:4-5

[10] Isaiah 58:6-7

[11] Isaiah 58:8

- [12] Isaiah 58:9-10
- [13] Isaiah 58:11-12
- [14] Isaiah 58:13-14
- [15] [Galatians 5:14](#)
- [16] [James 1:27](#)
- [17] [Isaiah 64:6](#)
- [18] [Hebrews 11:4](#)
- [19] [1Samuel 15:22](#)
- [20] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=6E2hYDIFDIU> (access 08/16)
- [21] [Genesis 4:2-5](#)
- [22] [Luke 8:2](#)
- [23] [Joshua 6:25](#)
- [24] Ruth
- [25] Genesis
- [26] Luke 6:31
- [27] Romans 13:8
- [28] Matthew 12:10
- [29] John 5:10
- [30] John 9:14
- [31] John 13:34
- [32] Luke 6:31
- [33] Matthew 18: 21-22
- [34] Matthew 5:42
- [35] Matthew 5:44
- [36] James 1:27
- [37] Ephesians 4:15
- [38] 1Timothy 6:10
- [39] 1John 2:15
- [40] Hebrews 5:12
- [41] 2Corinthians 5:17
- [42] Galatians 5:1
- [43] Matthew 25:35-40
- [44] Mark 16:15
- [45] 1Corinthians 12:31-13:13
- [46] Acts 21:20
- [47] Acts 18:6
- [48] Acts 28:28
- [49] Acts 21:21-24
- [50] Romans 8:28
- [51] John 5:39
- [52] Psalm 119:18
- [53] John 16:13
- [54] 1John 4:8

- [55] Mark 7:6-9
- [56] 2Corinthians 3:6
- [57] 1Corinthians 2:14
- [58] Romans 10:3-4
- [59] Titus 3:5
- [60] Ephesians 2:8-9
- [61] Romans 7:18-19
- [62] Romans 7: 24-25
- [63] Galatians 3:24
- [64] Romans 11:6
- [65] Isaiah 64:6
- [66] Hebrews 12:24

Chapter 46

To Believe or not to Believe, That is the Question? The Evolution Connection!

Queen Victoria reigned from 1837 to 1901—the second longest reign of any British monarch in history. Queen Elisabeth II has just surpassed that period on September 11th, 2015. Explaining England's great success as a nineteenth century nation, Victoria once said,

England has become great and happy by the knowledge of the true God through Jesus Christ . . . This is the secret of England's greatness. [\[1\]](#)

But England did not stay great for long. For it was during Queen Victoria's very reign that the seeds of destruction were planted, grew and multiplied. In the early and mid-eighteen hundreds, following such men like Darwin, the great empire accepted the false theories of naturalism and evolution. Through the acceptance of these doctrines, England ate the fruit which would lead to her own downfall.

Naturalism is the idea that all reality can and should be explained by natural non-guided forces. Naturalism denies the existence of the supernatural or states that if the supernatural exists, it does not interfere with the natural world. James Hutton and Charles Lyell were the advocates or promoters of naturalism in science, which is called uniformitarianism. Darwin and Lyell were close friends. Darwin even wrote that it seemed like his theory, the *Origins*, came out of the mind of Lyell.

Uniformitarianism is the idea that geological features should and could be explained by present-day natural forces at their present day rates and not by a worldwide Flood. Lyell said his goal was to get "*Moses out of science.*" He trained as a lawyer

and used his lawyer's power of persuasion to cleverly promote Hutton's ideas in his very popular book *Principles of Geology*.

It is interesting to note that Apostle Peter, writing to the Early Church in order to “*stir up your pure minds by way of remembrance*,”[\[2\]](#) said the following:

Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, and saying, Where is the promise of his coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.[\[3\]](#)

The idea of uniformitarianism, or the idea that all things have continued as they were from the beginning of the creation, ignores the global Flood. It states that the slow processes that we see today, such as wind and water erosion, are accountable for forming over millions of years all the geological features found in nature.

For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished.[\[4\]](#)

Hutton and Lyell willingly ignored the evidence of a worldwide Flood, which had been the traditional way the geological features were interpreted up until the end of the eighteenth century. They did so because they had an agenda to get “*Moses out of science*,” and not because of scientific evidence based on reason. Twentieth-century evolutionary scientist Derek Agar, an atheist, wrote the following about that very event:

My excuse for this lengthy and amateur digression into history is that I have been trying to show how I think geology got into the hands of the theoreticians (Hutton and Lyell) who were conditioned by social and political history of their day more than by observations in the field...In

other words, we have allowed ourselves to be brain-washed into avoiding any interpretation of the past that involves extreme and what might be termed ‘catastrophic’ processes![\[5\]](#)

The evolutionists wanted to avoid “*catastrophic*” processes, because that is what the creationists were advocating with their interpretation of the geological column as a result of the global Flood and not “*millions of years*” of slow evolutionary history. Stephen Jay Gould, a formerly foremost evolutionary American scientist, made the comment about Charles Lyell’s uniformitarianism in his remarks concerning the famous “*Great Scablands Debate*.” During the “Great Scablands Debate” of the early 1920s, a scientist named Bretz presented a paper questioning the uniformitarian interpretation of the geological features found in the “Great Scablands.” Gould comments on the reaction of the American scientific “*establishment*” to this “*creationist*” idea.

The ‘establishment,’ as represented by the United States Geological Society, closed ranks in opposition (to Bretz).... Instead of testing Bretz’s flood on its own merits, they rejected it on general principles (because it sounded too much like the Global Flood of the Bible)... Bretz stood against a firm, highly restrictive dogma- uniformitarianism- that never had made any sense: the emperor had been naked for a century. Charles Lyell, the godfather of geological gradualism, had pulled a fast one in establishing the doctrine of imperceptible change.[\[6\]](#)

Bretz presented his scientific and evidence-based papers on the Great Scablands from 1923 until 1979. It took the establishment, the scientific community, fifty-six years before they were finally willing to accept his conclusions.[\[7\]](#) Their uniformitarian bias had prevented them from accepting Bretz’s conclusions earlier, because his interpretation could be considered as evidence for the global Flood. They could not allow a Divine foot in the door.[\[8\]](#)

But, eventually, the overwhelming scientific evidence of catastrophism, the idea that some type of catastrophic events caused much of the geological features that we find today, won the day. Modern-day evolutionists have, therefore, modified their theory to include periodical catastrophes. It's part of the Neo-Darwinist evolutionary theory. But they have adamantly held to "*millions of years*," because without "*millions of years*," evolution would be bankrupt. The Apostle Peter warns us that the day of reckoning will finally come for all mankind.

But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.[\[9\]](#)

Man prefers living his life free from the idea that there will be a judgment. The famous nineteenth century writer Aldous Huxley confessed he wanted to be free from the religious restraints so that he could behave himself in whatever manner he wished in order to fulfill his sexual desires. Huxley was the grandson of one of Darwin's closest friends, Thomas Huxley, often referred to as "Darwin's bulldog." Grandson Aldous, following his grandfather's conclusions, made the following apology, which I mentioned in an earlier chapter:

I had motives for not wanting the world to have meaning, consequently assumed it had none, and was able without any difficulty to find satisfying reasons for this assumption. The philosopher who finds no meaning in the world is not concerned exclusively with a problem in pure metaphysics; he is also concerned to prove there is no valid reason why he personally should not do as he wants to do. . . For myself, as no doubt for most of my contemporaries, the philosophy of meaninglessness was essentially an instrument of liberation. The liberation we desired was simultaneously liberation from a certain political and economic system and liberation from a certain system of morality. We objected to the morality because it interfered with our sexual freedom.[\[10\]](#)

So we find during the early nineteenth century a rising tide of intellectualism away from the **Bible** and faith and away from the traditional Christian interpretations in science. With the acceptance of millions of years of naturalism and then evolution, the wedge against faith had been laid and soon the whole house began to fall. In the **Psalms** we read,

If the foundations be destroyed, what shall the righteous do?[\[11\]](#)

Naturalism, uniformitarianism, and evolution were the philosophical ideas, though dressed in scientific garb, which attacked the foundation of Christianity. It is in the very book of **Genesis** that we find the record of Creation, the Fall of man, the Flood, the Tower of Babel, the judgment of Sodom and Gomorrah, and the need for a Redeemer. Right from **Genesis** we see the need of salvation, the need of redemption.

Through the **Bible** history we see man's failure as individuals and as nations to follow God. We see man's failure to live in harmony with God and one another. We see man's pathetic and despondent condition without God. However, it is in the **New Testament**, through the life of Christ, that we gain hope once again. We read the beautiful words from the mouth of the Messiah and His Apostles and gain strength to continue on in the weary world we find ourselves. Like Einstein said,

I am enthralled by the luminous figure of the Nazarene.... No-one can read the Gospels without feeling the actual presence of Jesus. His personality pulsates in every word. No myth is filled with such life.[\[12\]](#)

But today our families and our nations are reaping the fruits of having our Christian foundations destroyed by these false philosophies. We have sown the wind and are reaping the whirlwind.[\[13\]](#) In other words, we have sown vain, empty, foolish doctrines of men and are reaping the resulting moral chaos that threatens to bring down our entire formally-Christian culture.

Jesus said,

For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?[\[14\]](#)

We as a nation no longer believe the writings of Moses. We have rejected the historicity of the book of ***Genesis*** and no longer believe the Words of Jesus. It is foolishness unto us. As a result, we are experiencing the “***falling away***” spoken of by Apostle Paul.

Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering unto him, that you be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand. Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and the man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition.[\[15\]](#)

The apostle is warning that the day of Christ’s coming and our gathering together unto Him, or what is commonly referred as the Rapture, would not occur until after a falling away from the faith and the revealing of the Antichrist or “***the son of perdition.***” Paul gives us the reason for the falling away occurring,

Because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.[\[16\]](#)

Or in other words, we rejected the truth when it was revealed to us.

And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie.[\[17\]](#)

Are we believing the lie of naturalism, the lie of evolution?

Paul, writing to the Roman Christians, made the following statement:

For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse.[\[18\]](#)

King David of ancient Israel wrote,

The heavens declare the glory of God and the firmament shows his handiwork. Day unto day utters speech, and night unto night shows knowledge. There is no speech nor language, where their voice is not heard.[\[19\]](#)

In other words, God speaks through His creation to every man. The creation speaks of the glory of God. We are all without excuse, because all creation cries aloud of God's existence.

The book of ***Job*** is the oldest book in the ***Bible***. It was written from before the time of Moses, when the first five books of the ***Bible*** were edited and written down. Nevertheless, we find a similar commentary:

But ask now the beasts, and they shall teach thee; and the fowls of the air, and they shall tell thee: Or speak to the earth, and it shall teach thee: and the fishes of the sea shall declare unto thee. Who knows not in all these that the hand of the Lord hath wrought this? In whose hand is the soul of every living thing, and the breath of all mankind.[\[20\]](#)

In the study of the stars, of nature, and of life; we should be brought to the realization that the only logical conclusion for it all is a loving Creator-God. But why has man fallen away from the truth? Paul goes on in his letter to the ***Romans*** to explain why:

Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, And changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things.[\[21\]](#)

Sounds like the theory of evolution, the new creation myth for modern man. Today's modern science has

changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator.[\[22\]](#)

And what about us, have we accepted the lies of modern science that negate the Creator God? The ***Proverbs*** tell us,

The fear of the Lord is the beginning of knowledge: but fools despise wisdom and instruction.[\[23\]](#)

Are we being foolish or wise? Will Jesus' own warning come to pass? Is our Christian love waxing cold because of the abundance of iniquity in today's society? Is the abundance of our material blessing choking out God's Word in our lives so that we become unfruitful? When Jesus asked His disciples the following question, was He being rhetorical, or prophetic, or both?

Nevertheless when the Son of man comes, shall he find faith on the earth?[\[24\]](#)

Jesus' question reminds me of Friedrich Nietzsche's famous quote on the death of God in his story ***The Madman***, which Dr. Ravi Zacharias uses often in his discourses:

"Whither is God?" he cried; "I will tell you. We have killed him - you and I. All of us are his murderers. But how did we do this? How could we drink up the sea? Who gave us the sponge to wipe away the entire horizon? What

were we doing when we unchained this earth from its sun? Whither is it moving now? Away from all suns? Are we not plunging continually? Backward, sideward, forward, in all directions? Is there still any up or down? Do we not feel the breath of empty space? Has it not become colder? Is not night continually closing in on us?"[\[25\]](#)

Nietzsche seems to have known that the rejection of God would cause mankind to fall into an endless abyss of hopelessness. Is this not what we see in the world today? ***Are we not plunging continually?*** Jesus said the love of many would wax cold as a result of the increase in iniquity in the last days. ***Has it not become colder?*** It certainly seems like in our lifetime that it's become a bit colder even with all the talk of global warming! ***Is not night continually closing in on us?*** We have chosen darkness rather than light, because our deeds are evil.[\[26\]](#) We have rejected the love and light of God. We have killed Him and have embraced the darkness. That darkness that promised us liberty was itself the servant of corruption and now we are in bondage to it.[\[27\]](#) We ourselves cannot escape.

But there is an escape. God has made a way of escape. Turn around and call out to the Father in Jesus' name and He will hear you. He promises that if we confess and forsake the way of darkness, He will have mercy upon us.[\[28\]](#) Jesus said,

I am the light of the world: he that follows me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.[\[29\]](#)

Are we seeking the truth? Then we should come to the light, the light of Christ, the true light and He will set us free! As Jesus said,

If ye continue in my words, then are ye my disciples indeed; and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.[\[30\]](#)

But he warned,

If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness.[\[31\]](#)

In other words, if we think we have the light already and don't need Jesus, then we're *really* in darkness. Like Paul also said,

In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.[\[32\]](#)

Have we been blinded by the god of this world, or has the glorious light of Christ opened our hearts and minds to God's truths? Taste and see that the Lord is good.[\[33\]](#) We need to let our hearts be the test-tube to see if Christ is real. The future is in our hands. Will He find faith in us? Here are a few quotes from books concerning the evolution/creation debate which you may find helpful in your search to find the truth.

James Perloff's ***Tornado in a Junkyard: The Relentless Myth of Darwinism*** has lots of good information and is a good starting point. If you read nothing else, Perloff's book is sufficient. When discussing the Big Bang, Perloff makes the following observation:

Evolutionists have frequently stated that scientific discussions must exclude creation by God because supernatural events fall outside the realm of natural law, which is what science deals with.... But the Big Bang itself violates natural law. The laws of physics state that matter and energy can neither be created nor destroyed. This is the First Law of Thermodynamics, the law of the conservation of energy. As well-known physicist Paul Davies wrote in his book "The Edge of Infinity," the Big Bang "represents the instantaneous suspension of physical laws, the sudden, abrupt flash of lawlessness that allowed

something to come out of nothing. It represents a true miracle—transcending physical principles...” If one allows for an event beyond natural law -- a “true miracle” as Davies put it -- then it is logically inconsistent to exclude other events, such as creation by God. If there was a “cosmic egg,” who put it there? The cosmic chicken? Scientists have always agreed that there is a cause for every effect. How then can the greatest effect of all -- the universe itself -- have arisen without cause? [34]

Dr. Henry Morris’ *The Long War Against God: The History and Impact of the Creation/Evolution Conflict* is a historical study giving a good understanding of the long conflict between those who believe in a Creator and those who don’t. Morris concludes,

Only an omnipotent, omniscient, personal God could possibly account in any rational sense for the evidence of limitless power in the processes of the universe, or the infinite complexities of design in the organized systems of the universe (expressly living systems!), or the attributes of personality in human beings (self-consciousness, will, emotion, abstract reasoning, etc.). This is only logical, cause and effect reasoning, which is supposed to be the basic approach to any scientific study of the universe. But evolutionists, both ancient and modern – ignore logic when it comes to origins, in order to avoid having to recognize God. [35]

In *Bones of Contention: A Creationist Assessment of Human Fossils* Marvin L. Lubenow does an interesting study of the human fossil record and finds the results confirm the creationist’s viewpoint: there are *no* intermediate fossils. Lubenow writes,

The popular myth is that fossil evidence virtually proves human evolution. The reality is that evidence has been a disappointment to evolutionists and is being de-emphasized. In actuality, the human fossil evidence

falsifies the concept of evolution. The Bible, the Word of the living God, clearly declares that humans are specially created. The human fossil evidence is completely in accord with what Scripture teaches.[\[36\]](#)

Dr. Gary Bates presents a thorough examination of the Extra-terrestrial theory in his best-selling Amazon creationist book *Alien Intrusion: UFOs and the Evolution Connection*. Those who believe aliens may have seeded the first life on our planet need to read this book. He explains,

The universal and accepted law of biogenesis simply states that all life comes from life. No one has ever seen lifeless chemicals arrange themselves into complex, information-bearing bio-molecules needed for life. There are many evolutionary scientists who readily admit this. Yet by faith they believe that this conversion of lifeless chemicals to organic molecules must have occurred early in the history of our planet. Such an unsupported assertion qualifies as religious belief because it deals with the unobserved origin, and therefore the meaning, of life....The concept of panspermia merely shifts the problem of life's origin further into outer space where it cannot be tested.[\[37\]](#)

Ken Ham's classic *The Lie: Evolution/Millions of Years* will help you understand why the evolution/millions of years is such an important philosophical issue.[\[38\]](#) Ham explains the problem is not abortion, homosexuality, and gay marriage. These are not the problem. These are just the symptoms. The real problem is the rejection of God's authority found in God's Word.

Once we reject God's authority, where do we stand? We stand on our own authority. Then everyone does that which is right in his own eyes. But the *Bible* tells us,

There is a way that seems right unto a man, but the ways thereof are the ways of death.[\[39\]](#)

Adam and Eve's ultimate sin in the garden was rejecting God's authority and doing their own thing. They exalted themselves above God and made themselves gods. Sounds to me like today's modern day philosophy.

Dave A. Schoch's [*The Assumptions Behind the Theory of Evolution: The Modern Theory of Evolution Isn't Dead – Because it was Never Really Alive!*](#) will further your understanding of the assumptions that evolutionists believe off-hand and why they are unfound scientifically and logically. Schoch notes,

Naturalism is not a criterion of science. The only criterion of science is searching for the truth, no matter where one's investigation may lead, no matter what direction the search may go. Naturalistic interpretations are being imposed upon facts instead of being inferred from those facts. For example, the Law of Causation dictates that (1) nothing happens or takes place by and of itself; (2) that no action, work, movement, or energy process takes place without an initiating cause; (3) that the cause is always greater than the effect that it causes; and (4) that the cause must be sufficient enough in order to produce the effect that is being attributed to it.

Now, we can begin from any place on this planet, with anything, and follow the string of events – the effects and their causes – backward in a very scientific manner to the point where we reach the beginning. Once we reach the very beginning we run out of naturalistic causes sufficient enough to produce you, me, the world, and the cosmos around us. True science has demonstrated this over and over again. Once we run out of naturalistic causes for the universe and all it contains, the fact that everything is here requires us to look toward the supernatural. [\[40\]](#)

The truth is the facts of observational science have destroyed the evolutionary myth, but atheistic scientists are refusing to let a

Divine foot in the door. They are adamantly clinging to their historical evolutionary fable which is contrary to reason and sound science. Why? Because they do not want God in their understanding. They don't want to accept God in their science or in their lives. Like the Scripture explains,

Professing themselves to be wise, they have become fools.
[41]

In [***Evolution: A Theory in Crisis***](#) Dr. Michael Denton, who is not a creationist, gives a critical look at the theory of evolution, explaining why the theory is not credible. Denton writes,

Neither of the two fundamental axioms of Darwin's macroevolutionary theory – the concept of the continuity of nature, i.e., the idea of a functional continuum of all life forms linking all species together and ultimately leading back to a primeval cell, and the belief that all the adaptive design of life has resulted from blind random process – have been validated by one single empirical discovery or scientific advance since 1959. [42]

Editor John Ashton has collected 50 articles from Doctors of Science where each one offers his reason for believing [***In Six Days: why fifty scientists choose to believe in creation***](#). My older son read Ashton's collection when considering the alternatives to the six-day creation story. The essays presented in Ashton's book convinced him that creation was indeed the more scientific and logical choice.[43]

Brian Young's ***Doubts about Creation? Not After This!*** has some interesting tid-bits not found in any of the other books mentioned. He touches on the Nephelim of ***Genesis*** and the ***Book of Enoch***. When talking about the validity of the ***New Testament*** he notes,

History even shows that many of the disciples of Christ were killed themselves for following Jesus. If these men

were lying, they would have to be crazy to die for a lie. The only way they could do such a thing is to actually believe it. How could they be deceived into believing such a thing when they already had their doubts to begin with? Only a fool would die for a cause without proof. The disciples clearly had proof because they saw not just the empty tomb, but the resurrected Jesus. [44]

Why do we find Flood legends throughout the various civilization of the world? Why are the stories so similar? Is it because they are the result of one common event? Charles Martin investigates this question in his book *The Flood Legends: Global Clues of a Common Event*. When comparing the Babylonian version to the *Genesis* account Martin says,

The Babylonian account sounds more like a fairytale. This is not to say that the Babylonians made up their version. Not at all; the two versions are too alike to be independently invented. The changes and distortions we see are, most likely, the results of the dispersion (the scattering of the different language groups at the time of the confusion of the languages at the Tower of Bable)...If the dispersion happened in the Mesopotamian region, then we can expect one of these two versions to be the original, "source version." Comparing the two stories, basing our judgments solely on the text, the Genesis version seems to be more logical of the two. I consider the Hebrew version to be the source of the Flood legends from around the globe. [45]

In *Dinosaurs or Dragons? Creation or Evolution?* Darek Isaacs researches the evidence of dragons in history trying to decide if the dragons were in fact dinosaurs. He comes to a surprising conclusion. For example, Isaacs discusses the pictographs of large pterosaurs drawn by ancient American Indians and spoken of in their legends passed down from antiquity. The evolutionists claim these flying reptiles died out 65 million years ago. Isaacs writes,

Yet, again, the American Indian exercised commendable knowledge about creatures that were not supposed to be around. These creatures seemingly made such a large impact on the psyche of the Indians that they were memorialized in paintings and carvings. This is exactly the kind of evidence we would expect to see if the legends of the dragons and huge flying reptiles were based on truth. This is archaeological confirmation to the oral and written histories of our past.[\[46\]](#)

Phillip Johnson's *Darwin on Trial* exposes the irrational position of the evolutionists. While on sabbatical in England, Berkeley University Professor Johnson became interested in the Darwinian question and took a legal look at the arguments and found them extremely lacking. He writes,

To scientific naturalists, recognition of a supernatural reality amounts to superstition, and hence to an abandonment of science. To theists, on the other hand, the concept of a supernatural Mind in whose image we are created is the essential metaphysical basis for our confidence that the cosmos is rational and to some extent understandable. Scientific naturalists insist, paradoxically, that the cosmos can be understood by a rational mind only if it was not created by a rational mind.[\[47\]](#)

Dr. Carl Werner, using history and observational science, shows the weaknesses and faults of the evolution theory. His book *Evolution: The Great Experiment* is well illustrated and easily understood by youth and adults alike. When talking about the original source of the DNA he states,

One of the biggest problems facing scientists who support evolution is to explain how DNA could come about by random interaction of chemicals. Many scientists who oppose evolution look at DNA as a feature of design,

implying that there was a designer who made the DNA and programmed it with information. [\[48\]](#)

He goes on to calculate the probability of an 18,000 letter DNA forming correctly by chance. His calculations come up with a staggering improbability: a number followed by 10,837 zeros. He compares this number with the mathematical improbability of someone winning the national lottery every day of the year, a number with only 2,881 zeros after it. With such impossible odds, Werner questions whether life could have really formed naturally. [\[49\]](#)

In *Search for the Truth* Bruce Malone offers over 125 one-page articles on the theory of evolution. Each article can be used separated as “a letter to the editor,” if need be. Malone states,

Darwinism offers a world view that concludes that people exist as a result of purposeless processes. Therefore, ultimately right or wrong do not exist. Evil becomes just a matter of poor training so we can ultimately perfect ourselves. This is in direct opposition to the Biblical world view that starts with an intelligent Creator, explains that death and suffering are a direct result of man's actions, and provides a solution to this problem which are not based on our efforts to make retribution or 'improve ourselves'. Both world views use science to support their conclusions. This book addresses which world view is best supported by the actual scientific evidence. [\[50\]](#)

Dr. Stephen Meyer's lengthy tome *Signature in the Cell* is a scientific defence of *Intelligent Design*. When examining the problem that the information code presents to the evolutionist's theory, Meyer concludes,

Our uniform experience affirms that specified information – whether inscribed in hieroglyphics, written in a book, encoded in a radio signal, or produced in a simulation experiment – always arises from an intelligent source,

from a mind and not a strictly material process. So the discovery of the specified digital information in the DNA molecule provides strong grounds for inferring that intelligence played a role in the origin of DNA. Indeed, whenever we find specified information and we know the causal story of how that information arose, we always find that it arose from an intelligent source. It follows that the best, most causally adequate explanation for the origin of the specified, digitally encoded information in DNA is that it too had an intelligent source. Intelligent design best explains the DNA enigma.[51]

In his book *Creation Facts of Life* Dr. Gary Parker asks whether all the variation we see in human beings today could come from two created human beings? We find out that research done by evolutionists Francisco Ayala suggests that a human couple would have a difference of 6.7% in their gene traits. He calculated that a human couple with just that amount of DNA difference, which is the average difference he found in couples, would translate into the mathematical possibility of a couple producing a staggering 10 to the 2,017th power different children.

That's a 1 followed by 2,017 zeros. The number of atoms in the known universe is a mere 10 to the 80th, nothing at all compared with the variety that is present in the genes of just two human beings.

Those are a few of the books I've read on the evolution/creation debate. If you haven't investigated the topic thoroughly please get a hold of some of these books and read. You may be surprised at how much good scientific information and reasoning there is that refutes the evolutionary concept.

Notes:

[1] <http://logosresourcepages.org/History/quotes.htm> (accessed 03/2016)

[2] [2Peter 3:1](#)

[3] [2Peter 3:3-4](#)

- [4] [2Peter 3:5-6](#)
- [5] Derek Ager, *The Nature of the Stratigraphical Record*, Macmillan, 1981, pg. 46-47.
- [6] Stephen Jay Gould, "The Great Scablands Debate," *Natural History*, Vol. 87:7 (Aug.Sep 1978) pg.12&14.
- [7] <http://www.detectingdesign.com/harlenbretz.html> (accessed 03/2016)
- [8] http://www.drjbloom.com/Public%20files/Lewontin_Review.htm (accessed 03/2016)
- [9] [2 Peter 3:7](#)
- [10] Aldous Huxley, "Confessions of a Professed Atheist," Report: Perspective on the News, Vol. 3, June 1966, p. 19.
<http://evolutionfacts.com/Evolution-handbook/E-H-23a.htm> (03/2016)
- [11] [Psalm 11:3](#)
- [12] <http://gentleislam.com/love/pages/einstein.htm> (accessed 03/2016)
- [13] [Hosea 8:7](#)
- [14] [John 5:46-47](#)
- [15] [2Thessalonians 2:1-3](#)
- [16] [2Thessalonians 2:10](#)
- [17] [2Thessalonians 2:11](#)
- [18] [Romans 1:20](#)
- [19] [Psalm 19:1-3](#)
- [20] [Job 12:7-10](#)
- [21] [Romans 1:21-23](#)
- [22] [Romans 1:25](#)
- [23] [Proverbs 1:7](#)
- [24] [Luke 18:8](#)
- [25] Friedrich Nietzsche, *The Madman*, 1882.
<http://www.historyguide.org/europe/madman.html> (accessed 03/2016)
- [26] [John 3:19](#) And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.
- [27] [2Peter 2:19](#) While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage.
- [28] [Proverbs 28:13](#) He that covers his sin shall not prosper: but whoso confesses and forsakes them shall have mercy.
- [29] [John 8:12](#)
- [30] [John 8:31-32](#)
- [31] [Matthew 6:23](#)
- [32] [2Corinthians 4:4](#)
- [33] [Psalm 34:8](#) O taste and see that the Lord is good: blessed is the man that trusts in him.

- [34] James Perloff, *Tornado in a Junkyard: The Relentless Myth of Darwinism*, Refuge Books, Maine, 1973, p.123-124
https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hIWthzqE_h0
<http://jamesperloff.com/why-the-creation-evolution-debate-matters/>
 (03/2016)
- [35] Dr. Henry Morris, *The Long War Against God: The History and Impact of the Creation/Evolution Conflict*, Master Books, Arizona, 1989, p.274.
<http://creationtoday.org/product/the-long-war-against-god/> (03/2016)
- [36] Marvin L. Lubenow, *Bones of Contention: A Creationist Assessment of Human Fossils*, Baker Books, Michigan, 1992, p.334.
<http://bakerpublishinggroup.com/books/bones-of-contention-revised-and-updated-edition/142791> (03/2016)
- [37] Gary Bates, *Alien Intrusion: UFOs and the Evolution Connection*, Master Books, Arizona, 2004, p.126.
https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2jjhkf_e4pM (03/2016)
- [38] Ken Ham, *The Lie: Evolution/Millions of Years*, Master Books, Arizona, 1987. <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oKF2MxPIJ28>
 (03/2016)
- [39] *Proverbs* 14:12
- [40] Dave A. Schoch, *The Assumptions Behind the Theory of Evolution: The Modern Theory of Evolution Isn't Dead – Because it was Never Really Alive!*, Author House, Indiana, 2008, p.72.
http://www.goodreads.com/author/show/1249087.Dave_A_Schoch
 (03/2016)
- [41] *Romans* 1:22
- [42] Michael Denton, *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis*, Great Britain, 1985.
<http://wasdarwinwrong.com/pdf/korthof18.pdf>
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=B-Nh3RjZQiI> (03/2016)
- [43] John Ashton, Editor; *In Six Days: why fifty scientists choose to believe in creation*; Master Books; Arizona, USA; 2001.
http://api.ning.com/files/kvOHI9cTrw7nNm9triMxsw6T5A7r3Q0S7e2RPDerPNa0GRvO96ilNq6QDhf*A4jVWiDDrGp2n71bBZleXO9pHKbQ1oPST-47/InSixDaysLO.pdf (03/2016)
- [44] Brian Young; *Doubts about Creation? Not After This!*; Creation Instruction Publishing; Oregon, USA; 2008, p.239. (accessed 03/2016)
<http://creationtoday.org/product/doubts-about-creation-not-after-this/>
- [45] Charles Martin; *The Flood Legends: Global Clues of a Common Event*; Master Books, Arizona, USA; 2009, p.97.
<http://creationtoday.org/product/flood-legends-global-clues-of-a-common-event/> (03/2016)
- [46] Darek Isaacs; *Dinosaurs or Dragons? Creation or Evolution?*; Bridge Logos; Florida, USA; 2010, p.47.
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rho47Mey0Ww> (03/16)

- [47] Philip Johnson; *Darwin on Trial*; Regnery Gateway Publishing Co; 1991, p.164.
<http://www.maxddl.org/Creation/Darwin%20On%20Trial.pdf>
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=gwj9h9Zx6Mw> (03/2016)
- [48] Dr. Carl Werner; *Evolution: The Great Experiment*; New Leaf Press; Arizona, USA; 2008, p.193.
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=XIqto00mf3w>
<http://thegrandexperiment.com/> (03/2016)
- [49] Ibid, p.196-197
- [50] Bruce Malone, *Search for the Truth*, www.searchforthetruth.net, p.6.
- [51] Stephen Meyer, *Signature in the Cell: DNA and the Evidence for Intelligent Design*, Harper Collins Publishers, New York, 2009, p.347.
- [52] Gary Parker, *Creation Facts of Life: How Real Science Reveals the Hand of God*, Master Books, 1980, p.126.

Chapter 47

The Scofield Connection – The Pre-Tribulation Fallacy with Corrie Ten Boom's Perspective

I have just been re-watching Bill Salus's [video](#) on America in Bible Prophecy.[1] Bill comes out as a defender of the Pre-Tribulation rapture. Many Christians hold dearly to the pre-tribulation rapture escape doctrine in spite of the fact that it is contrary to sound doctrine and traditional ***Bible*** interpretation held for hundreds of years by our Christian forefathers. I will need to make a short case to refute the pre-tribulation doctrine as it is called.

Up until the 1830s no one had ever heard of such a doctrine. Since the time of Christ the church had taught that the true believers would suffer persecution for their faith. Jesus, himself, had said,

The servant is not greater than his Lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you. [\[2\]](#)

Apostle Paul when writing to the Corinthian believers said,

We are troubled on every side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but not in despair; persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed. [\[3\]](#)

In fact in the book of ***Hebrews*** the eleventh chapter we find a history of the heroes of faith of times past many who died for their beliefs.

And others were tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection: and others had trial of cruel mocking and scourging, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonment: they were stoned, they were

sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented; (of whom the world was not worthy:) they wandered in mountains, and in dens and in caves of the earth. And these all, having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise: God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect.[\[4\]](#)

In 1563 *Foxe's Book of Martyrs* was first published. Written by John Foxe the Protestant theologian and leader, it was a famous collection of the history of the Christian martyrs from the time of the Christian persecutions by Nero to the then present.[\[5\]](#) In it, over and over again, one could see that God did not always rescue His beloved servants, but He gave them strength to suffer and die for their faith. As Apostle Peter had said,

Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you: but rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's suffering; that, when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.[\[6\]](#)

The mentality of the Christian believer for eighteen hundred years was that he was going to suffer for his Christian faith and world view in this life. Jesus had told us so,

If the world hates you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hates you.[\[7\]](#)

However, that all changed around the 1830's when John Nelson Darby a famous Plymouth Brethren preacher in England visited a spirited revival in Glasgow, Scotland. A young woman named Margaret MacDonald, a member of the congregation,

shared a revelation she claimed to have received of the Lord. She believed that the church would not go through tribulation in the last days but would be miraculously saved by Christ. Darby incorporated this idea into his own Biblical framework and eschatology.[8]

Later, C. I. Scofield amplified Darby's teachings and spent various years researching and footnoting Biblical passages to reinforce the pre-tribulation idea. Scofield himself seems to have a dubious background. He abandoned his first wife and two children after being released from jail. He had been serving time for his part in a railroad scam including criminal forgery. He then adopted as his mistress a young woman from the St. Louis Flower Mission whom he afterwards left for a rich widower.[9]

Scofield's financial supporters were wealthy Jewish businessmen who were determined that the Jews should have a homeland, a place where they could be safe from religious persecution. We do not know for sure that their motivation was humanitarian, as some believe it was totally diabolical. We do know that Scofield worked in their employ for many years and used as his residence the famous Lotus Club in New York City indirectly owned by some of these financial barons.

One of the first Scofield met was Samuel Untermyer, who later became chairman of the American Jewish Committee, president of the American League of Jewish Patriots, and chairman of the Non-sectarian Anti-Nazi League. Untermyer introduced Scofield to such influential Jewish leaders as Samuel Gompers, Fiorello LaGuardia, Abraham Straus, Bernard Baruch, and Jacob Schiff. Scofield later travelled to Europe where he studied and researched at Oxford and elsewhere at their expense. They later arranged the publication and distribution of his concordance and annotated *Scofield Reference Bible* in 1909.[10]

The result was the *Scofield Bible* footnotes and concordance adhered to a thoroughly pro-Jewish interpretation of the Scriptures. His footnotes reinforced the idea that the Jews were

still God's chosen people despite the fact that they had denied Christ and instigated His death. Scofield not only incorporated the pro-Jewish doctrine into his **Bible** footnotes, but also, the pre-tribulation doctrine and the doctrine of millions of years of theistic evolution.

Somehow, Scofield became a good friend of Dwight L. Moody. When Moody died suddenly in 1899 at the age of 62, it was Scofield who gave the first funeral eulogy of the great evangelist. In fact Scofield was known as Moody's pastor. ***Scofield's Reference Bible*** with his footnotes was later adopted by the Moody Bible Institute in Chicago and the Torrey Bible Institute in Los Angeles. As a result Scofield's doctrines influenced all the Full-Gospel Businessmen, the Fundamentalists and Evangelical churches and universities. The ***Scofield Reference Bible*** became the favorite study **Bible** of almost all Protestant pastors. It is impossible to overstate the influence of Cyrus Scofield on twentieth-century Christian beliefs. His **Bible** has been the standard reference work in virtually all Christian ministries and divinity schools in the USA during the last century.[\[11\]](#)

I want to finish this chapter with a warning from a famous Evangelist, Miss Corrie Ten Boom. Miss Boom was a Dutch survivor of the WW2 Nazi Concentration Camps. Because of a typographical error, she was miraculously released from a camp where her sister had died. Her mother and father had also died in a previous camp. On her release Corrie returned to Holland and after the war worked with victims of Nazi brutality.

She taught and lectured on forgiveness travelling even in Germany. She noted that those who had the power to forgive were able to readjust to post war life and to reincorporate into society. Those however who held unto bitterness became incapacitated and were unable to find fulfillment in the post war period. She became a world traveler speaking about her WW2 concentration camp experience. Her famous book, ***The Hiding Place***[\[12\]](#) documents her experience and was also made into a [movie](#).[\[13\]](#)

During her travels to China, she was able to speak with the leaders of the underground Christian Chinese church. She learned that it was the pre-tribulation doctrine that had caused the Chinese Christians to be unprepared for the persecution which they experienced under Mao. The Chinese Christians implored Corrie to warn the Christians in the West of the dangers of such a doctrine. In 1974, Corrie published an article *[Prepared for the Coming Tribulation](#)*, from which I will paraphrase.

Corrie believes the world is deadly ill and dying. But although the world is dying and God has signed its death certificate, He still needs His ambassadors, His over-comers, to be streams of living waters and channels of mercy to the dying world.

In Ravensbruck, the concentration camp where Corrie's sister Betsy died, she and her sister had been God's representatives from Heaven. They were there because they had helped persecuted Jewish families. Seven hundred people from Holland, Russia, Poland, and Belgium were crammed into a room built for a mere two hundred. As far as Corrie knew, she and her sister were the only representatives' of God's kingdom in that room. But because of their presence and because of their sharing their faith with others, things changed. Jesus said,

In the world you shall have tribulation; but be of good cheer, I have overcome the world.[\[14\]](#)

Corrie says that we can be over-comers today by bringing the love and light of God to a world filled with darkness and hate. When we read the ***Bible*** we may even get frightened as we read of the promised tribulation and persecution that are to come. We even see them coming true today. But we can still shout "hallelujah," because Jesus has said,

He that overcomes shall inherit all things: and I will be His God, and he shall be My son.[\[15\]](#)

This is the future and hope of this world. Not that the world will survive – but that we shall be over-comers in the midst of a dying world.[\[16\]](#)

Corrie went on further and said she could not understand why God let her sister die in that horrible concentration camp. But later, she realized that Betsy's death was the catalyst that caused Corrie to end up travelling the world to tell people about Jesus. But she warned:

There are some among us teaching there will be no tribulation, that the Christians will be able to escape all this. These are the false teachers that Jesus was warning us to expect in the latter days. Most of them have little knowledge of what is already going on across the world. I have been in countries where the saints are already suffering terrible persecution.[\[17\]](#)

Corrie goes on to explain about what happened on her visit to China. The Chinese Christian leaders said that the American missionaries had told them that before the tribulation would come they would be raptured away. Therefore, the Chinese Christians were not prepared for tribulation or persecution. They were expecting God to supernaturally save them. But then the Chinese communists came and millions were tortured to death. The Chinese Christians encouraged Corrie to warn the west of the coming persecution. She writes:

In America, the churches sing, 'Let the congregation escape tribulation', but in China and Africa (and throughout the Middle East and India) the tribulation has already arrived. In last year alone, more than two hundred thousand Christians were martyred in Africa. Now things like that never get into the newspapers because they cause bad political relations. But I know. I have been there. We need to think about that when we sit down in our nice houses with our nice clothes to eat our steak dinners. Many, many members of the Body of Christ are being

tortured to death at this very moment, yet we continue right on as though we are all going to escape the tribulation. I feel I have a divine mandate to go and tell the people of this world that it is possible to be strong in the Lord Jesus Christ. We are in training for the tribulation, but more than sixty percent of the Body of Christ across the world has already entered into the tribulation. There is no way to escape it....We are next![\[18\]](#)

Corrie also tells us how we can get ready for the persecution that will come one day. First of all she says we need to feed on God's Word and digest it so that it becomes part of our very being. Like Joshua said to the Jews as they entered the promise land:

This book of the law shall not depart out of thy mouth, but thou shall meditate upon it day and night that thou may observe to do all that is written therein, for then shall thou make thy way prosperous and then thou shall have good success.[\[19\]](#)

Corrie says we should have disciplined **Bible** study each day, not only to memorize **Bible** passages, but to apply those passages to our lives. She goes on to say that we need to develop a personal relationship with Jesus, not the Jesus of yesterday, but the life-changing Son of God who is alive and well and willing to move in the hearts of men today. We need an infilling of the Holy Spirit as a priority. The disciples of the past could not have stood up against the horrible persecution they received without the power of the Holy Spirit. Neither will we be able to face the coming persecution and tribulation without our own personal infilling of the God's Spirit. Nor must we wait until tribulation comes before starting to encourage one another.

The fruit of the Spirit should be the dominant force of every Christian's life.[\[20\]](#)

We also may be fearful of the coming tribulation. But as Corrie says, when we are weak, then He can be strong in us.^[21] If we have been faithful in preparation, the mighty inner strengthening of the Holy Spirit will help us through. We may not be strong in ourselves, but we will be strong in Him who will make us more than conquerors.^[22] And though it may seem He slays us, by not saving us from the persecution or tribulation, yet will we trust in Him^[23]; knowing that if we endure until the end, we shall receive a crown of life!^[24] Get ready. It's later than we think!

Notes:

- [1] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GKOKqCk5vuo> (accessed 03/16)
- [2] [John 15:20](#)
- [3] [2Corinthians 4:8-9](#)
- [4] [Hebrews 11:35-40](#)
- [5] http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Foxe's_Book_of_Martyrs (03/16)
- [6] [1Peter 4:12,13](#)
- [7] [John 15:18-19](#)
- [8] <http://reformed-theology.org/html/issue06/pre-trib.htm> (03/16)
- [9] <http://proliberty.com/observer/20090507.htm> (accessed 03/16)
- [10] <http://www.sweetliberty.org/issues/hoax/unified.htm#.VLlq8I2ePPk>
- [11] [Ibid](#)
- [12] http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Hiding_Place_%28biography%29
- [13] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=XX0GwjXExFE> (accessed 03/16)
- [14] [John 16:33](#)
- [15] [Revelation 21:7](#)
- [16] <http://www.emoaf.org/RAPTURE.html> (accessed 03/16)
- [17] [Ibid](#)
- [18] [Ibid](#)
- [19] [Joshua 1:8](#)
- [20] <http://www.emoaf.org/RAPTURE.html>
- [21] [2Corinthians 12:10](#) Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong.
- [22] [Romans 8:37](#) Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us.
- [23] [Job 13:15](#) Though he slay me, yet will I trust in him.

[24] [James 1:12](#) Blessed is the man that endures temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.

Chapter 48

Moses' Exhortation to Israel, America and the World!

Deuteronomy Chapter 8

By Moses

All the commandments which I command thee this day shall ye observe to do, that ye may live, and multiply, and go in and possess the land which the LORD swore unto your fathers. And thou shall remember all the way which the LORD thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou would keep his commandments, or no. And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knew not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but by every word that proceeds out of the mouth of the LORD doth man live.[\[1\]](#)

Thy raiment waxed not old upon thee, neither did thy foot swell, these forty years. Thou shall also consider in thine heart, that, as a man chastens his son, so the LORD thy God chastens thee. Therefore thou shall keep the commandments of the LORD thy God, to walk in his ways, and to fear him. For the LORD thy God brings thee into a good land, a land of brooks of water, of fountains and depths that spring out of valleys and hills; A land of wheat, and barley, and vines, and fig trees, and pomegranates; a land of oil olive, and honey; A land wherein thou shall eat bread without scarceness, thou shall not lack any thing in it; a land whose stones are iron, and out of whose hills thou may dig brass.[\[2\]](#)

When thou hast eaten and art full, then thou shall bless the LORD thy God for the good land which he hath given thee. Beware that thou forget not the LORD thy God, in not keeping

his commandments, and his judgments, and his statutes, which I command thee this day: Lest when thou hast eaten and art full, and hast built goodly houses, and dwelt therein; And when thy herds and thy flocks multiply, and thy silver and thy gold is multiplied, and all that thou hast is multiplied; Then thine heart be lifted up, and thou forget the LORD thy God, which brought thee forth out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage; Who led thee through that great and terrible wilderness, wherein were fiery serpents, and scorpions, and drought, where there was no water; who brought thee forth water out of the rock of flint; Who fed thee in the wilderness with manna, which thy fathers knew not, that he might humble thee, and that he might prove thee, to do thee good at thy latter end; And thou say in thine heart, My power and the might of mine hand hath gotten me this wealth.[\[3\]](#)

But thou shall remember the LORD thy God: for it is he that gives thee power to get wealth, that he may establish his covenant which he swore unto thy fathers, as it is this day. And it shall be, if thou do at all forget the LORD thy God, and walk after other gods, and serve them, and worship them, I testify against you this day that ye shall surely perish. As the nations which the LORD destroyed before your face, so shall ye perish; because ye would not be obedient unto the voice of the LORD your God.[\[4\]](#)

Notes:

[1] [Deuteronomy 8:1-3](#)

[2] [Deuteronomy 8:4-9](#)

[3] [Deuteronomy 8:10-17](#)

[4] [Deuteronomy 8:18-20](#)

Chapter 49

The Illuminati and the Protocols of Zion How Deep is That Rabbit Hole?

Time and time again I have sat down to write this chapter and have had difficulty getting started. Why is that? It may very well be because of the importance of the information I will share with you herein. I am talking about a sinister group of men and woman dedicated to the cause of Lucifer and to bringing his rule to earth.

Adam Weishaupt is credited with founding the operational phase of the organization back on May 1st 1776 which he named the *Order of the Illuminati of Bavaria*. You can read about it on-line[\[1\]](#) or watch former Los Angeles FBI director talk about it on [YouTube](#),[\[2\]](#) However, I believe the Illuminati are descendents of former disciples of Satan since the time of Cain before the flood and later from the time of Nimrod at the Tower of Babel. Some even give credit to Solomon the King of Israel for putting into writing some of the oldest satanic secrets and rituals.[\[3\]](#)

Weishaupt's goal was to set up a secret society espousing world domination in the service of Lucifer. The society would suppress 'inferior' human stock and have violently anti-Christian sentiments. Weishaupt realized that the quickest way to spread the Illuminist message was to infiltrate the rich and the powerful. With the help of Templar Baron Adolph Von Knigge, Weishaupt's organization was accepted into the Masonic orders where the rich and powerful met. George Washington, a Masonic member, is quoted as to having his doubts about some of the more radical elements in the Masonic Lodges in America, which may be reference to the Illuminist dominated lodges.[\[4\]](#)

Weishaupt envisioned a world in which populations would be controlled by a powerful élite unconstrained by conventional values. Their plans were to conquer nations economically and

psychologically. They would control the banking system and control the press. They would have international rather than national goals. They would break down the national populations of the world and bring them under their control and finally bring in a New World Order, a One World Government.

[Albert Pike](#), a Southern Civil War General, was dismissed from his position as military leader during the war because he used American Indians with his soldiers and allowed them to scalp the fallen Northern soldiers. He escaped to Canada where he lived for the remainder of the war. After the assassination of Lincoln, he returned to the States and was pardoned of his crimes by the newly promoted Vice-President Andrew Johnson. Johnson had just happened to be a member of the Masonic Lodge which Pike administered before the war. Pike later became head of all the Masonic Lodges and furthered the plans for world take over using the Masonic Lodges as bases. His book *Morals and Dogmas* was widely read by Masonic Lodge members until 1974. He is the only Southern Civil War general who has a statue in Washington, DC.[\[5\]](#) It was through Pike's leadership that the radicle Luciferian element took over the Masonic Lodges worldwide.

The *Protocols of Zion* were published in beginning of the 20th century exposing the plans of the Illuminati for world domination. Please take time to look at them.[\[6\]](#) The press, however, has denounced them as fakes. But if the press is in their hands, which is what the *Protocols* reveals, one would expect such a denouncement. Concerning the *Protocols*, remember what the illustrious Henry Ford, the founder of Ford Motor Company, said when asked his opinion.

The only thing I want to say about the Protocols is that they were published ten years ago and what is revealed in their pages is exactly what has happened and is happening up until now.[\[7\]](#)

The Illuminatis believe that Jesus was a counterfeit and that Lucifer is the true Light. Slowly but surely they have worked their

plans for world domination and the final revealing of the Son of Lucifer, whom the **Bible** calls the ***Son of Perdition***,[\[8\]](#) or more commonly known as the ***Antichrist***.[\[9\]](#) The sinister web the Illuminati has woven consists of worldwide banking families and their interests, corporate leaders, think tanks, Royal Families, the Council on Foreign Relations, the Trilateral Commission, Masonic Lodges and other civil associations and fellowships like the Rosicrucian's, the Rotary Club, etc. Read Des Griffin's book ***Fourth Reich of the Rich***[\[10\]](#) for more information on this topic. Or watch the movie *The Brotherhood of the Bell* starring Glenn Ford to get a feel for how this group works.[\[11\]](#)

Through money, sex and power they compromise leaders to fall in line to their international and cultural agenda. True Christianity is their biggest enemy and whom they fear the most. They use whatever methods available to destroy their enemies even sacrificing some of their own to meet their goals.

In ***Micah*** we read,

The good man is perished out of the earth: and there is none upright among men: they lie in wait for blood; they hunt every man his brother with a net. That they may do evil with both hands earnestly, the prince asks, and the judge asks for a reward; and the great man, he utters his mischievous desire: so they wrap it up.[\[12\]](#)

In other words evil men weave a web of wickedness together. In the International Standard Version they translate the last phrase as

the famous confess their perverted desires, and they scheme together. [\[13\]](#)

These ***perverted*** evil men are behind world wars, assassination of world leaders, economic ups and downs, and civil unrest. They control the United Nations, National Governments and political parties, the Courts or at least the key players involved. They have no scruples and use whatever methods necessary to silence their

enemies. They control the media, the FBI, the CIA and NSA. National leaders do their bidding following carefully the plans assigned to avoid embarrassment, political defeat, scandal or death.

Does the **Bible** have anything to say about the above possibility? Many **Bible** scholars believe that the thirteenth chapter of **Revelation** with its Mark of the Beast technology is talking about such a Luciferian world government. We read,

And all the world wondered after the beast (the Antichrist). And they worshipped the dragon (the Devil) which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? Who is able to make war with him?

And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him (the Antichrist),...And he causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or his umber of his name...

And his number is 666.[\[14\]](#)

The **Bible** tells us that the Antichrist shall come into power

peaceably, and obtain the kingdom by flatteries.[\[15\]](#)

He is also considered the author or propagator of the “**Holy Covenant**”[\[16\]](#) which many **Bible** students believe will allow for the rebuilding of the Jewish sacrificial Temple on the Temple Mount. The **Bible** goes on to say,

And the king shall do according to his will; and he shall exalt himself, and magnify himself above every god, and shall speak marvelous things against the God of gods, and shall prosper...Neither shall he regard the God of his

fathers, nor the desire of woman, nor regard any god: for he shall magnify himself above all.[\[17\]](#)

Of course, he will have opposition and need to quench them in order to enact his world government. He may very well be responsible for fomenting a peace settlement in the Middle East, the Holy Covenant mentioned above, only later to break it himself because of those opposed to his attempt at world dominion. The breaking of the Holy Covenant with the placing of the abomination that makes desolate[\[18\]](#) is the sign Jesus mentions as the beginning of the terrible period in ***Bible*** Prophecy called the Great Tribulation.

When asked by his disciples:

What shall be the sign of thy coming, and the end of the world?[\[19\]](#)

Jesus answered with not just one sign, but numerous. He said,

Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in diverse places. All these are the beginning of sorrows...And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold...And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.[\[20\]](#)

The culmination of these events comes in the next few verses where Jesus says,

When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation,

spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso reads, let him understand:)...For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no nor ever shall be. And except those days be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.[\[21\]](#)

I am sad to say that the horrible days Jesus was warning about are coming closer every day. From what we see in **Bible** prophecy mankind is moving to the brink of destruction, no doubt because of the use of nuclear weapons or some other weapon of mass destruction.

The good news is Jesus has shortened the days of tribulation to three and a half years so that some of mankind will be left on the earth. He has promised to return to save his own in a super natural event known as the rapture. He has also promised to bring peace on earth for a thousand years. Jesus' promised return is the only hope for mankind.

But before those promises come to pass, mankind is going to go through its worst period in all of history making the Inquisition, the Holocaust and Stalin's and Mao's persecutions look like boy's play. Jesus said,

Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake.[\[22\]](#)

Are you ready for the days prophesied by Christ, His disciples and various **Old Testament** prophets? It's not too late to open your heart today to the King of Kings and begin your training in discipleship. Stop hesitating and decide. It won't be long!

Notes:

[1] <http://vigilantcitizen.com/hidden-knowledge/the-order-of-the-illuminati/> (accessed 03/2016)

- [2] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=BplUD6kQYuU> (accessed 03/16)
- [3] <https://socioecohistory.wordpress.com/2010/05/13/the-history-of-the-illuminati-the-13-satanic-bloodlines/> (accessed 03/2016)
- [4] <https://www.thefederalistpapers.org/founders/washington/was-george-washington-really-a-devout-mason> (accessed 03/2016)
- [5] http://www.bibliotecapleyades.net/sociopolitica/sociopol_vril07a.htm
- [6] <http://www.biblebelievers.org.au/przion1.htm> (accessed 03/2016)
- [7] Des Griffin, *[Fourth Reich of the Rich](#)*, Emissary Publications, Oregon, 1976.
- [8] [2Thessalonians 2:3](#)
- [9] [1John 2:18](#)
- [10] Des Griffin, *[Fourth Reich of the Rich](#)*, Emissary Publications, Oregon, 1976.
- [11] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TKOhJppgmuw> (accessed 08/16)
- [12] [Micah 7:2-3](#)
- [13] [Micah 7:3](#) International Standard version
- [14] [Revelation 13:3-18](#)
- [15] [Daniel 11:21](#)
- [16] [Daniel 11:22](#)
- [17] [Daniel 11:36-37](#)
- [18] [Daniel 11:31](#)
- [19] [Matthew 24:3](#)
- [20] [Matthew 24:4-14](#)
- [21] [Matthew 24:15-22](#)
- [22] [Matthew 24:9](#)

Section Five: The Verdict

Chapter 50

How Short is Shortened? – The Secret!

In the last chapter I mentioned that Jesus has shortened the days of Tribulation to **3 and ½ years**. How do we know that? What about the secret rapture? Isn't there a secret rapture for the saved Christians sometimes during or at the beginning of the Tribulation before it really gets bad? Isn't that what Jesus meant when he said he was going to shorten the days of Tribulation? God wouldn't let us suffer, would He?

Well, let's read what Apostle Peter wrote about suffering.

If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are ye; for the spirit of glory and of God rests upon you.[\[1\]](#) Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; but let him glorify God on this behalf. For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God: and if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear? Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God commit the keeping of their souls to him in well-doing, as unto a faithful Creator.[\[2\]](#)

So as Christians suffering should not be something we are not prepared for. Apostle Paul said,

All that live Godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.[\[3\]](#)

Jesus Himself said,

If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you.[\[4\]](#)

If we are not prepared to suffer for our faith, are we not really believers?

Now let's get back to the shortened days. Yes, Jesus said He would shorten the days of Tribulation and He has. He has shortened them and He has let us know in His revelation to John in the book of ***Revelation*** that the Great Tribulation period will be ***3 and ½ years***. How do we know this? The prophecies in ***Revelation*** show us that the Tribulation period will be ***3 and ½ years***. Five times ***3 and ½ years***, or its equivalent, is mentioned in Jesus' prophecy to Apostle John within a three chapter spread.

But the court which is without the temple leave out, and measure it not; for it is given unto the Gentiles: and the holy city shall they (the Antichrist forces) tread under foot forty and two months. (3 and ½ years)[\[5\]](#)

In the above verse in ***Revelation 11*** we see that the Antichrist forces will be in control for 42 months.

And I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and threescore days, clothed in sackcloth. (3 and ½ years)[\[6\]](#)

Here we see that the two end-time witnesses will prophesize for 1260 days against the Antichrist world government.

And the woman (the church in Tribulation) fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days. (3 and ½ years)[\[7\]](#)

And when the dragon (the devil) saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman (the church) which brought forth the man child. And to the woman (the church) were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is

nourished for a time (1), and times (2), and half a time (½), from the face of the serpent. (3 and ½ years)[8]

The above verses from **Revelation 12** show the persecution of God's people during the Tribulation period will be for 1260 days, or time, times, and half a time; which is again the **3 and ½ year** period. Notice that the Jews had a 360-day year based on 12 lunar months, each month having between 29-30 days. They added extra days periodically to realign the lunar-year with the solar-year.

And there was given unto him (the Antichrist) a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given him to continue forty and two months. (3 and ½ years) ... And it was given unto him (the Antichrist) to make war with the saints (God's people, the church), and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.[9]

Revelation 13 is from the perspective of the Antichrist government which implements the computer-chip implant and enforces its dictates over the world and God's people for 42 months.

In all the verses mentioned above the numbers are equivalent to **3 and ½ years**, therefore we know the Great Tribulation will be **3 and ½ years** long. Each time Jesus is talking about the same time period, the Great Tribulation, from a slightly different viewpoint.

In conclusion we see that **Revelation 11, 12, and 13** are all talking about the same events, but each from a slightly different perspective. They are not in chronological order. They are the same event from different perspectives. The **3 and ½ year** period is repeated by Jesus over and over again because He doesn't want us to miss it. He wants us to get the point. The prophecies of **Daniel** even confirm and reinforce this viewpoint where we see

the Antichrist persecuting God's people for the same *3 and ½ year* period.

And he (the Antichrist) *shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints* (the church in Tribulation) *of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they* (God's people, the church in Tribulation) *shall be given into his* (the Antichrist's) *hand until a time* (1) *and times* (2) *and the dividing of time* (½). (3 and ½ years)[\[10\]](#)

The following verses show the persecution element like we find in *Revelation* and elsewhere.

And in the latter time of their kingdom, when the transgressors are come to the full, a king (the Antichrist) *of fierce countenance, and understanding dark sentences, shall stand up. And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power* (Satan's power): *and he shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and practice, and shall destroy the mighty* (the USA?) *and the holy people* (God's people in Tribulation).[\[11\]](#)

In *Daniel 12* we see the Great Tribulation period mentioned along with *3 and ½ years*.

And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which stands for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time (the Great Tribulation): *and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book.*[\[12\]](#) (The second part of the verse is an illusion to the rapture which will happen soon afterwards when the Great Tribulation is over.)

And I heard the man clothed in linen, which was upon the waters of the river, when he held up his right hand and his left hand unto heaven, and swore by him that lives for ever

that it shall be for a time (1), times (2) and an half (½); and when he (the Antichrist) shall have accomplished to scatter the power of the holy people, all these things shall be finished. (3 and ½ years)[\[13\]](#)

I am sorry, I don't want to get too deeply into this subject at the moment. I have already given you quite a bit to think about and study. In the sequel to this book we can look at this period in more detail. But because some churches are teaching the idea that Christ will shorten the days of Tribulation and will secretly rapture the believing Christians out before the really bad stuff happens, I have had to clarify this point.

A shortening of the days cannot be confirmed scripturally. It's a false idea. It's wishful thinking and is contrary to the overall picture presented by Christ and his disciples in the *New Testament* and in the prophecies of Daniel and other prophets in the *Old Testament*. The shortened days are the **3 and ½ year** period mentioned over and over again in the scripture. The truth is that there is no secret rapture. That's the secret.

Here's a very brief outline. The first stage is the period of the "**signs of the times**" which Jesus, Paul, John and Peter talked of before the rising of the Antichrist. Many of these prophecies have been fulfilled or are being further fulfilled in today's world.

The second stage is the rise of the Antichrist and the one-world government coming peaceably into power. It may be that an intermediate stage consists of a banking or economic crash that ushers in the one-world government, or accelerates its implementation.

At some point, the third stage, Antichrist will confirm a seven year agreement with many called in the scripture the ***Holy Covenant***. It may have to do with the Middle East Crisis as many ***Bible*** scholars believe it will give the Jewish nation the permission to build the Third Temple on the Temple Mount which we have talked about earlier. The Temple Institute in

Jerusalem is preparing for such an event. With the building of the Temple, the Jews will renew prayer and sacrificial worship on the Temple Mount, something they have not done since 70 AD, almost 1950 years ago.

Now we will look at a prophecy from *Daniel 8* about the length of the period of Jewish sacrificial worship together with the period of the Great Tribulation.

Then I heard one saint speaking, and another saint said unto that certain saint which spoke, How long shall be the vision concerning the daily sacrifice, and the transgression of desolation (the Great Tribulation), to give both, the sanctuary and the host (God's people, the church of true believers) to be trodden under foot? And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days, then shall the sanctuary be cleansed.[\[14\]](#)

In the above prophecy of *Daniel* we learn that the period of prayer and sacrifice plus the period of the “*transgressions of desolation*” or what Jesus referred to as the Great Tribulation period will together be a total of two thousand and three hundred days. We know that the tribulation period will be only one thousand two hundred and sixty days, as we have seen in the five references in *Revelation*. Therefore, all we need to do is subtract the 1260 days from the 2300 days to find out how many days of prayer and sacrifice will take place. The 1040 day figure we arrive at is the period of prayer and sacrifice by the Jewish and other religious officials on the Temple Mount in Jerusalem. These prayers and sacrifices take place before the Tribulation and start some 220 days after the Holy Covenant has been signed. The tribulation starts when the Antichrist breaks the covenant and stops the religious service in Jerusalem and declares himself world dictator.

I will go over it once again. The covenant is signed giving the Israelis permission to rebuild their Temple on the Temple Mount. The rebuilding takes them some 220 days or three months to get

done as much has been already prepared for by the Temple Institute and possibly the Israeli government. However, if the Temple isn't finished, the sacrifice will start anyway, perhaps in some sort of tent, like the Jewish people did before the first Temple was built. The sacrifice and prayers will be performed for 1040 days. Then the Antichrist will stop the sacrifice and prayers and stand in the Temple declaring himself authoritarian world ruler. This is the sign that the Great Tribulation has begun and will happen in the middle of the seven-year peace covenant which is the ***“midst of the week”*** spoken of by Daniel the prophet.

And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate.[\[15\]](#)

The word “week” in the above verse comes from the Hebrew word “shabuah” which means seven. It is used in ***Genesis*** in the history of Jacob with his father-in-law Laban.[\[16\]](#) Jacob wants to marry Laban's beautiful younger daughter Rachel and agrees to work seven years as dowry payment. However, the night of the marriage, his father-in-law Laban, unbeknownst to Jacob, gives him his older daughter Leah instead. Jacob wakes up in the morning and lo and behold he's been sleeping with the wrong woman. His father-in-law assures him that giving away the youngest daughter before the oldest is against the custom of his culture. If Jacob works another seven years for the younger daughter, he can have her also:

Fulfill her week, and we will give thee this also for the service which thou shalt serve me yet seven other years.
[\[17\]](#)

The King James translators show here that the word translated as “week” is actually signifying a seven year period.

Resuming again we see that at the midst of the seven-year period, the Antichrist breaks the covenant or peace agreement and

tries to initiate a totalitarian world government with himself as ruler. The covenant, which he initiated and signed some 3 and ½ years earlier, seems to give the Israeli nation permission to rebuild their Temple on the Temple Mount. At the signing of the Covenant, the Antichrist may already be President of a cooperative One-World government, as he is already a person of authority. In ***Revelation 17*** we see that there are ten political leaders or nations or regions who give their allegiance to the beast (the Antichrist).

The ten horns which thou saw are ten kings,...These have one mind, and give their power and strength unto the beast.[\[18\]](#)

We know these “nations” will cooperate with the Antichrist to ***“make war with the Lamb.”***[\[19\]](#) Since the Christians are the people of the Lamb, they are the ones who the Antichrist makes war against. We have seen this over and over again in the ***Bible*** verses we have looked at from both ***Revelation*** and ***Daniel***. The beast and the ten nations or regions he controls will also

hate the whore,[\[20\]](#) ***that great city which reigns over the kings of the earth***[\[21\]](#) ***and (together) burn her with fire.***
[\[22\]](#)

Could this be the destruction of America by some preemptive strike? It remains to be seen. But at present, America seems to fit the bill of ***Babylon the Whore*** better than any nation on the face of the earth.

When the Antichrist breaks the peace agreement or Holy Covenant, the Great Tribulation begins. In his breaking of the Covenant he has had to invade the Middle East which results in a major world war as the nations or regions of the world line up for or against him.

In the areas he controls, he initiates mandatory computer chip implants, the mark of the beast, and stops all religious worship

other than worship of himself. He may very well use some type of explosive device like the Electromagnetic Pulse or EMP to put America out of action, as has recently been made popular in the book ***“One Second After.”***[23] Those who refuse to accept the “mark of the beast computer chip implant” will be persecuted and considered enemies of the state, hunted down, captured, forced to accept the implant or be killed.

The Tribulation will last 1260 days, 42 months, or time, times and half a time; a ***3 and ½ year*** period. The woman, the believing church of ***Revelation 12***, tries to hide or escape to isolated areas to prevent capture and forced computer implants or death. The two end-time witnesses of ***Revelation 11*** prophesize for the 1260 days of Tribulation and are finally killed at the very end in Jerusalem.[24] Their dead bodies are left unburied. But after 3 days and ½, they come back to life, stand upon their feet, and are raptured into heaven at the rapture event that Jesus promised.[25]

Remember, the rapture event will occur ***“immediately after the tribulation.”***

Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him (the rapture event), ***that ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that day of Christ is at hand*** (or could happen at any moment or secretly).

Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day (the rapture-our gathering together unto the Lord) ***shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition*** (the Antichrist); ***who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sits in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.***[26]

Immediately after the Tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light,

and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: and then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together (the rapture event using the same words Paul uses in 2Thessalonians 2) his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.[\[27\]](#)

For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trumpet of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: then we which are alive shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words.[\[28\]](#)

Those waiting for a secret rapture will be sadly surprised. It will not happen. There is no secret rapture. Neither is there a rapture for the Christians before nor during the Tribulation and then a later one for the saved Jews after the Tribulation. There is only one rapture event at this time and it comes at the end of the Tribulation after the Antichrist has been revealed and has persecuted the saints for 42 months as **Revelation 11, 12 and 13** indicate. The rapture is for all true believers in Jesus Christ whatever their former faith or lack of faith may have been.

So in conclusion, we see that the Antichrist will persecute God's people and anyone else who refuses to cooperate with him for **3 and ½ years**, the second half of the last seven years. Then, "*immediately after the tribulation of those days*," the rapture event will take place.[\[29\]](#)

While God's children will be enjoying the marriage supper of the Lamb in the spiritual dimension,[\[30\]](#) the thirty to seventy-five days of the wrath of God will be poured out on earth on the

wicked in God's attempt to bring them to change.[\[31\]](#) The wrath culminates at the ***Battle of Armageddon*** where the Antichrist and Satan will be defeated by Christ at his physical return.

And the beast (the Antichrist) was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into the lake of fire burning with brimstone.[\[32\]](#)

At that point Jesus will bring peace on earth for a thousand year period.

And he (the angel) laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, and cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season. And I saw thrones, and they that sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.[\[33\]](#)

So, as you can see, as I have said before, Jesus' promised return is the only hope for mankind today.

But, how can these things be? Didn't Jesus say

that day and hour knows no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.[\[34\]](#)

And Apostle Paul said,

For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night.[\[35\]](#)

Yes, it's true, we do not know at this time the hour or the day. But when the time comes, if we are diligent servants, we will not be in darkness. We will know the times and the seasons. Paul reminds us right after the above verse:

For when they say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape. But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. Ye are all the children of light, and children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness.[\[36\]](#)

Even when Jesus said that no one knew the hour or day, he followed with:

But as the days of Noah were, so shall also of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.[\[37\]](#)

The unbelieving world was caught unawares, while Noah knew what was about to happen and had prepared at God's command a way of escape.

Knowing God's will, found in His Word, can give us discernment and can enlighten our eyes. We no longer walk in darkness, but have the light of life. God's Spirit will also lead us into all truth, just as He said it would.

We will take a more in depth look at the prophecies in ***Revelation*** and ***Daniel*** in the sequel to ***Where is America in Bible Prophecy?***

Notes:

- [1] [1Peter 4:14](#)
- [2] [1Peter 4:16-19](#)
- [3] [2Timothy 3:12](#)
- [4] [John 15:20](#)
- [5] [Revelation 11:2](#)
- [6] [Revelation 11:3](#)
- [7] [Revelation 12:6](#)
- [8] [Revelation 12:13-14](#)
- [9] [Revelation 13:5-7](#)
- [10] [Daniel 7:25](#)
- [11] [Daniel 8:23-24](#)
- [12] [Daniel 12:1](#)
- [13] [Daniel 12:13](#)
- [14] [Daniel 8:13-14](#)
- [15] [Daniel 9:27](#)
- [16] [Genesis 29:16-30](#)
- [17] [Genesis 29:27](#)
- [18] [Revelation 17:11-12](#)
- [19] [Revelation 17:14](#)
- [20] [Revelation 17:16](#)
- [21] [Revelation 17:18](#)
- [22] [Revelation 17:16](#)
- [23] W. R. Forstchen, *One Second After*, Tom Doherty Ass., NY, 2009.
- [24] [Revelation 11:8](#)
- [25] [Revelation 11:11-12](#)
- [26] [2Thessalonians 2:1-4](#)
- [27] [Matthew 24:29-31](#)
- [28] [1Thessalonians 4:16-18](#)
- [29] [Matthew 24:29](#)
- [30] [Revelation 19:1-9](#)
- [31] [Revelation 16:1-16](#)
- [32] [Revelation 19:20](#)
- [33] [Revelation 20:2-4](#)
- [34] [Matthew 24:36](#)
- [35] [1Thessalonians 5:2](#)

[36] [1Thessalonians 5:3-5](#)

[37] [Matthew 24:37-39](#)

Chapter 51

The End is Coming

There you have it. I believe America, a formerly great Christian nation, is suffering and under judgment. She has fallen away from the Lord, because she has refused

to be obedient unto the voice of the Lord.[\[1\]](#)

I believe America will continue to suffer as God's Word has so clearly demonstrated. I have tried to show that America surely parallels the picture of Babylon the Whore of **Revelation**. I have compared America with Israel of old who also suffered for abandoning the Words of the Lord and was finally conquered and Jerusalem destroyed by the Babylonians under Nebuchadnezzar.

Moses told them that it was not because of their own righteousness that God was with them, but because of the wickedness of those other nations He destroyed before them.[\[2\]](#) Even so, it was not that Nebuchadnezzar was so righteous that God let him conquer Israel and the other nations, but he was less wicked than the nations he conquered. Israel had become even more wicked than those ungodly nations, and so God was obliged to condemn her. Today we have the same situation with America.

Apostle Paul has warned that in the last days

evil men would wax worse and worse deceiving and being deceived.[\[3\]](#)

He said,

This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to

parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, Traitors, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away. Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.[\[4\]](#)

Doesn't this sound like the days we are living in today? Let's review what Jesus Himself said when talking about the time of the end and His coming. He said that

because iniquity would abound the love of many would wax cold.[\[5\]](#)

Remember He also said that the wars, famines, earthquakes and pestilences that we would see would only be the beginnings of sorrows.[\[6\]](#) He warned us three times in His end-time exhortation not to be deceived by false Christs who would deceive many.[\[7\]](#) He warned us many would believe lies. The peace prophets[\[8\]](#) in the time of Jeremiah told the people Jeremiah was a false prophet and that there would be peace, not war. These same prophets told the people to trust in the Temple of the Lord which had always saved them in the past. Jeremiah responded with these words which we have looked at earlier:

Trust ye not in lying words, saying, The temple of the Lord, The temple of the Lord, The temple of the Lord are these. ... Behold, ye trust in lying words which cannot profit. Will ye steal, murder, and commit adultery, and swear falsely and burn incense unto to Baal, and walk after other gods whom ye know not; and come and stand before me in this house, which is called by my name, and say, We are delivered to do all these abominations?[\[9\]](#)

And now, because ye have done all these works, says the Lord, and I spoke unto you, rising up early and speaking, but ye heard not; and I called, but ye answered not;

Therefore I will cast you out of my sight, as I have out all your brethren. Pray not for this people, neither lift up cry nor prayer for them, neither make intercession to me: for I will not hear thee.[\[10\]](#)

Therefore thou shalt speak all these words unto them; but they will not hearken to thee: thou shalt also call unto them; but they will not answer thee. And the carcasses of this people shall be meat for the fowls of heaven, and for the beasts of the earth; and none shall fray them away. Then will I cause to cease from the cities of Judah, and from the streets of Jerusalem, the voice of mirth, and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom, and the voice of the bride: for the land shall be desolate.[\[11\]](#)

But did God's people listen to his prophets? No, and neither will the Americans. They are drunk on the wine of the fornications which the whore of capitalism has offered them and they cannot see their own sins. God may even use a "heathen" nation to destroy them as he did to Israel and Judah of old. Or maybe the money that they love and serve in the end will destroy them. Or their own internal bickering will cause them to destroy one another.

Another sign that Jesus gave to his disciples of His coming and of the end of the world was that

this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world as a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.[\[12\]](#)

I quoted this verse in the previous chapter, but did not comment on it. Recently a news item stated that there is an organization whose goal is to get the written Word of God into every language on the earth to fulfill this prophecy. They claim that by 2020, they will have finished their objective and will have published the **Bible** in every known language in the world.[\[13\]](#) Are we

entering into the period of world history when the end will come? Will it be in our generation, or our children's or grandchildren's?

I will have to leave these questions and their answers to the next book in this series *Where is America in Bible Prophecy*. I had hoped to enter more fully into this question, but I needed to build the foundation of your faith. I needed to show how consistent **Bible** prophecy has been in predicting the future. **Bible** scholars estimate that about 80% of all **Bible** prophecies have already been fulfilled accurately.[\[14\]](#) Surely the remaining 20% will also be fulfilled in the same accurate manner.

We have come so far to some pretty strong conclusions. In the **Bible** we have seen that God condemned Israel for her sins. We have seen that Israel of old and America have a parallel history. The similarities are quite obvious. We have concluded that America may very well be the epitome of Babylon the Whore of **Revelation 18** and as thus has infected the whole world with her iniquity.

I need to add here before I finish that God's Word says,

In the multitude of words, there wants not sin.[\[15\]](#)

In other words, I have said a lot here in this book. I no doubt have not got everything right. I am human, make mistakes and get things wrong like everyone else. But I have shared with you how I see the Scriptures and the world situation so that you yourself will investigate to see if these things be so.

In **Ezekiel** we read,

Her (Israel's) prophets in the midst thereof (are) like a roaring lion ravening the prey; they have devoured souls; they have taken the treasure and precious things; they have made her many widows in the midst thereof.

Her priests have violated my law, and have profaned mine holy things...Her princes in the midst thereof are like wolves ravening the prey, to shed blood, and to destroy souls, to get dishonest gain. And her prophets have daubed them with untempered mortar, seeing vanity, and divining lies unto them, saying, Thus says the Lord God, when the Lord hath not spoken.

The people of the land have used oppression, and exercised robbery, and have vexed the poor and needy: yea, they have oppressed the stranger wrongfully. And I sought for a man among them that should make up the hedge, and stand in the gap before me for the land, that I should not destroy it: but I found none.[\[16\]](#)

Is the Lord asking you to be one of those men or women who will stand in the gap, the gap in the wall of our former Christian culture, and fight the spiritual war against the enemies of faith, truth and love? Will you stand up in the gap for Christ with Godly convictions and beliefs? Will you take the stand?

In the next book in this series we will look more closely at the prophecies of Daniel and how they fit together with those in ***Revelation***. We will look at the prophecies of Ezekiel and see how they compliment Daniel's. We will see that both Paul's predictions and Jesus' combine nicely with all of the above to give us a pretty accurate picture of the days ahead. We can know the future because God's Word has spoken clearly about it. It only takes for a man or woman to seek and search it out. My prayer is that you will be one of those men or women.

And ye shall seek Me and find Me when ye shall search for Me with all your heart.[\[17\]](#)

Notes:

[1] [Deuteronomy 8:20](#)

[2] [Deuteronomy 9:5](#)

[3] [2Timothy 3:13](#)

[4] [2Timothy 3:1-7](#)

[5] [Matthew 24:12](#)

[6] [Matthew 24: 6-8](#) And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. All these are the beginning of sorrows.

[7] [Matthew 24: 4-26](#) And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. All these are the beginning of sorrows. Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come. When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso reads, let him understand:) Then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains: Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house: Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes. And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days! But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day: For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened. Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect. Behold, I have told you before. Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, he is in the secret chambers; believe it not.

[8] [Jeremiah 8:11](#) For they have healed the hurt of the daughter of my people slightly, saying, Peace, peace; when there is no peace.

[9] [Jeremiah 7: 4-10](#)

- [10] [Jeremiah 7: 13-16](#)
- [11] [Jeremiah 7: 27-34](#)
- [12] [Matthew 24:14](#)
- [13] <http://www.christianpost.com/news/gmopotential-there-to-reach-whole-world-by-2020-44881/> (accessed 03/2016)
- [14] <http://www.reasons.org/articles/articles/fulfilled-prophecy-evidence-for-the-reliability-of-the-bible> (accessed 03/2016)
- [15] [Proverbs 10:19](#)
- [16] [Ezekiel 22:26-30](#)
- [17] [Jeremiah 29:13](#)

Chapter 52

Postscript

Spiritual Warfare in the Last Days

We are under Attack

In this last chapter you will find further confirmation from the Scriptures of what I have already shared with you. Please, take the stand for Jesus because we are indeed in serious spiritual warfare!

Apostle Paul says,

For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.[\[1\]](#)

What are those principalities Paul is talking about? We know

all scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.[\[2\]](#)

So what is Paul getting at?

He goes on to say that we must

Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine. For the time will come when they shall not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; and they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and they shall be turned unto fables.[\[3\]](#)

Are we turning away our ears from hearing the truth and only listening to what we want to hear from the word of God? Paul goes on to say that we should therefore,

study to show ourselves approved unto God, a workman that needs not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.[\[4\]](#)

In the *Old Testament* the Lord spoke through Isaiah saying,

Whom shall he teach knowledge? And whom shall he make to understand doctrine? Them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts, for precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little.[\[5\]](#)

Apostle Peter in the *New Testament* goes on to say that we should be like

newborn babes, (who) desire the sincere milk of the word, that you might grow thereby.[\[6\]](#)

So it is by careful and diligent study of the Word of God that we gain knowledge and understanding of truth. Therefore, it behooves us to study God's Word, as Peter admonishes, so we may be able

to give an answer to every man that asks you a reason of the hope that is in you with meekness and fear.[\[7\]](#)

But it is not just careful and diligent study of God's Word that leads us to truth. The Pharisees were careful and diligent students of God's Word and yet they failed to recognize the Messiah in their midst. Why? Because they were not letting their hearts receive, believe and follow the light that God's Word teaches. In other words, we need to implement or follow the teachings of God's Word. If we continue in God's Word by following the light of its truth and obeying its commandments, then God's Word will illuminate our path. Jesus said,

My doctrine is not minr but His that sent me. If any man will do His will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak for myself.[\[8\]](#)

The proof is in the doing. So we need to not only meditate, but put God's Word into practice. We remember what the Psalmist wrote,

I understand more than the ancients, because I keep thy precepts.[9]

And Apostle James reminds us,

But be ye doers of the Word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves.[10]

What then are the principalities which Apostle Paul speaks of and says wrestle against us? Where do we find such adversaries in God's Word? In the book of ***Daniel*** we find Daniel in fasting and praying for three weeks. At the end of the three weeks an angel appears unto him and speaks with him. The angel tells him that his prayers were heard the first day he prayed them. However, the Prince of Persia, an evil spiritual entity, withstood the angelic messenger for 20 days. After that time, Michael the archangel came to help the angelic messenger overcome his spiritual adversary. Finally the angelic messenger brings the message to Daniel.[\[11\]](#) So in other words, there are spiritual demonic forces or "***principalities***" or "***princes of darkness***" that fight against us.

In the book of ***Job*** we find more information about our spiritual enemy. Satan appears before the Lord with the other angels.

Now there was a day when the sons of God (angels or spiritual beings created directly by God) ***came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them. And the Lord said unto Satan, Where do you come from? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, from going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it. And the Lord said unto Satan, Have you considered my servant Job, that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and upright man, one that fears God, and eschews evil? Then Satan answered the Lord and said, Does Job fear God for nothing? Have you not made a***

hedge about him, and about his house, and about all that he has on every side? You have blessed the work of his hands, and his substance is increased in the land. But put forth your hand now, and touch all that he has, and he will curse you to your face. And the Lord said unto Satan, Behold, all that he has is in your power; only upon himself put not forth your hand. So Satan went forth from the presence of the Lord.[\[12\]](#)

Here we see the Lord giving permission to Satan to test Job by allowing Satan to afflict Job's family and goods. Later in the next chapter the Lord gives Satan permission to afflict Job's health, but not take his life. Yet the **Bible** says that

In all this Job did not sin with his lips.[\[13\]](#)

Jesus in his temptation is tempted by Satan, also.

And the devil, taking him up into a high mountain, showed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give you, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whosoever I will I give it. If you therefore will worship me, all shall be yours. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get you behind me, Satan, for it is written, You shall worship the Lord your God, and him only shall you serve.[\[14\]](#)

In these verses we see that Satan is the God of this world. Those who want riches and fame and power need only be willing to serve him and he will give them their desires, as you may have seen expressed in the 1997 film "*The Devil's Advocate*," [\[15\]](#) [\[16\]](#) and the earlier 1987 film *Hunk*,[\[17\]](#) among others such films.

Apostle Paul also says in *Ephesians*,

Wherein in time past you walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now works in the children of disobedience.[\[18\]](#)

In *Corinthians* he says something similar.

In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.[\[19\]](#)

So the devil has been given a measure of spiritual power in this present physical world.

In the book of *Revelation* we see the spiritual entities in the famous *Four Horses of Apocalypse* revealed when the Lamb opens the seals. The rider of the red horse was given power

to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.[\[20\]](#)

Obviously, the red horse symbolizes the spirit of war, the sales of arms, the military machine which we have looked at in earlier chapters of the book. But here we see it is an actual spiritual entity that is pushing constantly for war and more war. Red is also the color of the blood spilled by the war machine. In 1914, America fought “*the war to end all wars.*” In 1945 it was the war “*to make it safe for democracy.*” We were told there would “*be love and laughter and peace ever after*” as Vera Lynn sang in the famous British song “*White Cliffs of Dover.*”[\[21\]](#) Nevertheless, a hundred years since WW1 and seventy since WW2 and the world is still ripe with war. More deaths in war have occurred since WW2 than during. *The Peace Pledge Union* notes the following:

Since the end of World War Two in 1945 there have been over two hundred and fifty major wars in which over fifty million people (have been) killed, tens of millions made homeless and countless millions injured and bereaved. In the history of warfare the twentieth century stands out as the bloodiest and most brutal. Three times more people have been killed in the last century than all the previous five hundred.[\[22\]](#)

R.J. Rummel, in an article titled *Democide Since World War Two* states the following:

Let us stop a moment to think about this likely 80,000,000 murdered since WWII. This is a statistic impossible to grasp. Only twelve countries in the world have a population larger than this number of killed. It is as though the total Philippine population of 79,000,000 were murdered; or that all the people living in the Czech Republic, Hungary, Belgium, Portugal, Sweden, Austria, Switzerland, Denmark, Finland, and Norway were wiped out together--not in some natural catastrophe that kills quickly, but for most of the victims a painful and slow death at the hands of a government. To look at this toll another way, it is over five times the number of combat deaths for all the nations that fought in WWII alone. Add those killed in the Korean and Vietnam Wars, the two most deadly major wars since WWII, and the democide (or murder committed by government) 1946-1999 is still almost three times these total combat dead. Perhaps this democide is still impossible to absorb. Then consider this. If laid head to toe, and each of the corpses is assumed to be 5 feet tall (1.52 meters), then the 80,000,000 victims would circle the globe (at the equator) three times. Three times![\[23\]](#)

Another article from 1994 said that over 200,000,000 people have died in wars and government sponsored democide since 1939. Even as the writing of this there is war in Ukraine, Palestine/Israel, Iraq, Syria, Somalia, Libya and elsewhere. The prospect of future wars seems the most probable outcome to today's unstable political climate.

On the next horse of the Apocalypse we see the rider of a black horse who *“had a pair of balances in his hand.”*[\[24\]](#) Let's look at other places in the *Bible* where the same imagery is used. In *Hosea* we find,

***He is a merchant, the balances of deceit are in his hand:
he loves to oppress.***[\[25\]](#)

Here we are talking about the commercial capitalistic banking mercantile system which we have also looked at earlier. But now we see it actually has a spiritual force behind it. What Marx called, the “*dialectics of materialism*,”[\[26\]](#) is really something far worse. It is a demonic spiritual entity.

In the passage,

***A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of
barley for a penny; and see thou hurt not the oil and the
wine,***[\[27\]](#)

we find the imagery of poverty and wealth coexistent. A penny in antiquity was equal to a man’s daily wage. We see this in *The Parable of the Workers* where the householder pays his workers the penny they agreed upon at the end of the day.[\[28\]](#) So much like the world today where we see some working only to receive barely enough wages to feed themselves and their families as they live their lives in misery, while others have abundance of “*the oil and the wine*,” symbolic of riches and luxury.

The section in *Amos* is also very revealing. The Lord says,

***Hear this, O ye that swallow up the needy, even to make
the poor of the land fail, saying, When will the new moon
be gone, that we may sell corn? And the Sabbath, that we
may set forth wheat, making the ephah (amount or
quantity) small and the shekel (price) great, and falsifying
the balances by deceit? That we may buy the poor for
silver, and the needy for a pair of shoes; yea, and sell the
refuse of the wheat (food that has little or no value)?***[\[29\]](#)

The spiritual forces that are at work behind the scenes through the power of the great international companies and bankers have finally pushed the governments to remove the old barriers of religious holidays in order to buy and sell almost every day and every hour of the week. They also deceive us through their

advertising and sell us “food” products that aren’t even worth eating because their nutrient value is little or nothing.

In *Micah* we read,

Are there yet the treasures of wickedness in the house of the wicked, and a scant (or deceitful in the International Standard Version) measure that is abominable? Shall I count them pure with the wicked balances, and with the bag of deceitful weights? For the rich men thereof are full of violence, and the inhabitants thereof have spoken lies, and their tongue is deceitful in their mouth. Therefore also will I make thee sick in smiting thee, (or when I smite thee), in making thee desolate because of thy sins.[\[30\]](#)

Though God has no pleasure in the death of the wicked,[\[31\]](#) He will judge mankind of its transgressions. That is why we have that ominous feeling that one day judgment will come. It has to. We will reap what we have sown.[\[32\]](#)

The pale horse of the Apocalypse, “***Death and Hell,***” had power

over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with beasts of the earth.[\[33\]](#)

This is the third spiritual entity working together with the other two to bring death and hell to earth. Here we see famine, and violence and death in general perpetrated by this spiritual force.

The white horse of Apocalypse, actually the first horse mentioned in the chapter, is by some considered a lying spirit of antichrist. However, since the white horse of ***Revelation 19*** is obviously Jesus Christ,[\[34\]](#) I am prone to believe that the white horse in chapter six in the same book, “***going forth conquering, and to conquer,***”[\[35\]](#) is in fact the good spirit of God. Good does indeed exist and exerts its positive influence in the world. Not all is terrible and evil. The good exists and often brings forth victory, moments of peace, love and brotherhood. So the four horses of

Revelation are actually the four spiritual forces controlling the earth.

These are the four spirits of the heavens, which go forth from standing before the Lord of all the earth.[\[36\]](#)

Apostle Peter, therefore, warns us to

Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walks about, seeking whom he may devour.[\[37\]](#)

Apostle John tells us, which we have quoted before,

Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. Hereby know you the Spirit of God: every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: and every spirit that confesses not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof you have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.[\[38\]](#)

John goes even further and amplifies saying,

Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passes away, and the lust thereof: but he that does the will of God abides forever.[\[39\]](#)

Apostle James tells us

that the friendship of the world is enmity with God, ...whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is an enemy of God.[\[40\]](#)

Oddly enough the warning from John compares similarly with Eve's temptation in the Garden.

And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.[\[41\]](#)

Apostle Paul also reminds us saying,

But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.[\[42\]](#)

He goes on to say,

For Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as ministers of righteousness.[\[43\]](#)

No doubt Jesus had Satan's subtlety in mind when He warned His disciples and us today to not be deceived. Jesus' disciples had just been showing Him the buildings of the Temple which King Herod had been reconstructing. As they sat upon the Mount of Olives, they asked Him what would be the sign of His coming and the end of the world.[\[44\]](#)

Remember Jesus' first response was,

Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name and shall deceive many.[\[45\]](#)

He then gives some of the signs of His coming which you may know and we have noted in previous chapters: wars and rumors of wars, nation against nation, famines, pestilences, and earthquakes in diverse places[\[46\]](#) and concludes the list with a second warning that

many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.[\[47\]](#)

Reviewing another time we see Jesus then mentions that

because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.[\[48\]](#)

Apostle Paul, as we have seen in the last chapter, says something similar:

This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall... have a form of godliness, but deny the power thereof: from such turn away.[\[49\]](#) ***... But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving and being deceived.***[\[50\]](#)

So we are to expect false teaching to abound that will even have a form of godliness but will yet deny Jesus Christ has risen from the dead. We see this in a lot of the Eastern philosophies and the ***New Age Movement*** which consider Jesus a master or guru of the first class, but not much different from any other guru or spiritual leader such as Siddhartha, or Mohammed, or Confucius, or any other.

Many different Christian sects and churches also could fall into this group as Paul has warned,

But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed. As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel unto you than that you have received, let him be accursed.[\[51\]](#)

He also admonishes the Corinthians saying,

For if someone comes along and preaches another Jesus than the one we preached, or should you receive a different spirit from the one you received or a different gospel from the one you accepted, you are all too willing to listen.[\[52\]](#)

In other words, you shouldn't be listening to it or accepting it. Further on in the chapter he says,

For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light.[\[53\]](#)

Let's go back to **Matthew 24** where Jesus was warning of the false prophets and false Christs and review it again. He predicts that the

gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.[\[54\]](#)

He also mentions the

abomination of desolation spoken by Daniel the prophet[\[55\]](#)

shall stand in the holy place. Many eschatology students believe the **"holy place"** will be a rebuilt Jewish temple on the sacred Temple Mount in Jerusalem. **The Temple Institute** in Jerusalem is dedicated to preparing for the rebuilding of such a Temple and the renewing of Jewish sacrificial worship which we have talked about in an earlier chapter.[\[56\]](#)

Jesus states that the placing of the abomination of desolation in the holy place will mark the beginning of

great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.[\[57\]](#)

He goes on to repeat again His warning about false teachers.

For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that if it

were possible, they shall deceive the very elect. Behold, I have told you before.[\[58\]](#)

Apostle Paul has also warned saying,

Now the Spirit speaks expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.[\[59\]](#)

I am sorry to keep going over these verses, but I want you to get the point. We have seen that here in Europe many are going to the Reiki seminars to get enlightenment, healing power and attunements to be better able to help themselves and others. Reiki courses are offered at colleges and professional schools throughout Europe. A massive influx of New Age books with their under lining Eastern religious philosophy has taken place, besides the atheistic naturalistic evolutionary doctrines taught in the schools.

Reiki is presented as a scientific technique to acquired healing and get relief from stress and anxiety. But it is nothing more than the calling upon spirit guides or “angelic helpers” resulting in spiritual oppression or possession. Many Christians searching for more power and spiritual experience fall for the Reiki advertisement and get deceived especially if they do not have a strong foundation in the faith and in God’s Word. Catholics and Protestants can both be easily deceived. The founder of Reiki was a Buddhist Monk who spent 21 days in a Buddhist temple in prayer and fasting seeking enlightenment when he received his Reiki revelation. Because it is dressed in scientific terminology and Eastern metaphysics Westerners fall for it, even though they are normally wary of religious doctrines. A woman who attended our meeting said she had been introduced to Reiki through her evangelical friend.

To be able to discern the spirit behind the different philosophies we are presented with today, it is important to know the Word of God. The author of *Hebrews* writes,

The word of God is quick and powerful and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart. [\[60\]](#)

It is imperative to know the Word of God. Paul says it like this,

For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: for the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds; Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ. [\[61\]](#)

How can we bring our mind into obedience to God's Word, if we do not study it?

We will not have that ability to discern unless we are knowledgeable of God's Word. The Psalmist says,

Blessed is the man that walks not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor stands in the way of sinners, nor sits in the seat of the scornful. But his delight is in the law of the Lord; and in his law does he meditate day and night. [\[62\]](#)

Apostle Paul said to his disciple Timothy,

Meditate upon these things; give yourself wholly to them; that your profiting may appear unto all. [\[63\]](#)

The author of *Hebrews* states,

Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip. [\[64\]](#)

In the book of *Joshua*, which we have quoted earlier, we remember Joshua's admonition:

This book of the law shall not depart out of thy mouth, but thou shall meditate upon it day and night that thou may observe to do all that is written therein, for then shall thou

make thy way prosperous and then thou shall have good success.[\[65\]](#)

Is it because we as individuals, families, communities and nations have abandoned the Word of God that He has left us to our own devices to be deceived because we did not have a love for the truth? Have we allowed ourselves to be deceived by “*angels of light*”?[\[66\]](#) Jesus also warned,

If therefore the light that is in you be darkness, how great is the darkness![\[67\]](#)

Are we in darkness, when we actually believe we are in the light? We have refused to hunger and thirst after righteousness and have preferred to believe lies because they seem more comfortable and secure? We have loved the darkness rather than the light because our deeds are evil.[\[68\]](#) We have accepted the pill of compromise rather than take the pill of God’s Word that will awaken us to reality. Remember Neon in the *Matrix*.[\[69\]](#)

Having a good knowledge of God’s Word will help us to be able to discern the spirits and therefore the truth. Horace Greeley the famous editor of the *New York Tribune* and politician of the mid 1800s said,

It is impossible to enslave mentally or socially a Bible-reading people. The principles of the Bible are the groundwork of human freedom.[\[70\]](#)

In *Isaiah* we read we should not seek spiritual help from the dark side, from the occult, even if it is draped like it is today in scientific terminology.

And when they shall say unto you, Seek unto them that have familiar spirits, and unto wizards that peep (whisper) and that mutter: should not a people seek unto their God?[\[71\]](#)

When we seek the Lord in prayer, we need to learn to listen to His “*still small voice*” in our heart.[\[72\]](#) Isaiah goes on to say,

To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.[\[73\]](#)

Jesus when praying to his Father said,

Thy word is truth.[\[74\]](#)

When talking with his disciples he said,

the words I speak unto you they are spirit and they are life.[\[75\]](#)

That's why Apostle Paul has admonished us to study God's Word.[\[76\]](#) We need to know the Word of God to be able to discern if what we are hearing is of the Lord. If it is not according to His Word, then we know that it is not of God. The Word is the standard by which we judge all truth and error.

Being filled with the Holy Spirit is also a good protection against being deceived by "unholy" spirits. Jesus said that the Holy Spirit would ***"guide you into all truth."***[\[77\]](#) Jesus makes some conditional statements about the Holy Spirit and its presence with us.

If you love me, keep my commandments. And I will pray the Father and he will send you another Comforter, that he may abide with you forever; even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it sees him not, neither knows him: but you know him; for he dwells with you and shall be in you.[\[78\]](#)

In other words, if you love Me, keep My commandments and then I will send you the Holy Spirit. Or, I will send the Holy Spirit to those who love Me. You show you love Me by keeping My commandments. Jesus says,

If a man loves me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come and make our abode with him.[\[79\]](#)

Earlier we read where Apostle John told us to try or test the spirits to see if they are of God. Not everything we are viewing, reading or listening to is in accordance with God's Word. Much, in fact, is against God's Word and therefore we should avoid feeding our heart, mind and spirit with its contents. I could think of many television programs, music or reading material which would fit in that category. Programs like *The Family Guy*, *The Simpsons*, *Friends*, *The Big Bang Theory*, *Supernatural*, *True Blood*, *Vampire Diary*, *Walking Dead*, *American Pie* could be obvious examples of such negative feeding among many others. Remember what Alan Watt said:

Never watch the television. Never watch the television. It's the greatest scientific indoctrination tool ever devised. Have you figured that out? It has changed the whole culture of nations, not just one nation. Why do you think it was mandatory that everyone have access to televisions in Britain by the government?

Why do you think China is under the same program right now, because they love to be entertained? Do you really believe that? Most of your ideas and opinions come from television, because you mimic what you see. Never watch the television. You can't even watch a movie unless you do it critically.[\[80\]](#)

In the *Psalms* we read,

Turn away mine eyes from beholding vanity.[\[81\]](#)

We have to ask God to help us discipline ourselves. We can also pray for the Holy Spirit to give us the gift of “*discerning of spirits.*”[\[82\]](#)

Another important point is that we cannot pay money to receive the Holy Ghost. As we have seen earlier, Jesus says the Holy Spirit will come upon those who love him. We show our love for Him, by keeping His commandments.[\[83\]](#) His commandments are not grievous or difficult to fulfill.[\[84\]](#) God has promised that if we love Him He will send us the Holy Spirit.[\[85\]](#)

We should ask for an infilling of the Holy Spirit and or be prayed over to receive the Holy Spirit.

If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him? [\[86\]](#)

In the book of *Acts* we see the Apostle Paul praying over the new believers in Corinth to receive the Holy Spirit by the laying on of hands. [\[87\]](#) Simon the Sorcerer, earlier in the same book, tried to pay money to receive power to transmit the Holy Ghost.

Then laid they (the apostles) their hands on them (the new believers), and they received the Holy Ghost. And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Ghost was given, he offered money, saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost.

But Peter said unto him, Your money perish with you, because you have thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money. You have neither part nor lot in this matter: for your heart is not right in the sight of God. [\[88\]](#)

The courses that you pay for like Reiki that promise to impart unto you the ability to heal through something similar to the laying on of hands are contrary to the Word of God. The gift of healing is not something you can buy or obtain through meditation or fasting or doing an expensive course. The ***“gifts of healing”*** is just that, a gift God bestows upon some of His followers for the edification of the body of believers and for the manifestation of ***miracles*** for the unbeliever. [\[89\]](#) If you receive it some other way, it may very well be a “gift” from the dark side.

We today should beware and take heed to God's Word which tells us,

Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the

ends of the world are come. Wherefore let him that thinks he stands take heed lest he fall.[\[90\]](#)

And in another place it says something similar,

For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scripture might have hope.[\[91\]](#)

Finally Moses said,

The secret things belong unto the Lord our God: but the things that are revealed belong unto us and to our children that we may do all the words of this law.[\[92\]](#)

Let's leave the secret things in the Lord's hands and not be tempted by the promises of the occult. Let's follow the things God has revealed unto us in His written Word. May He bless you as you study His Word. May He speak to you through it and may it cause you to follow Him.

Thanks for taking time to read ***Where is America in Bible prophecy?*** I have left you with a lot of information to study and investigate. Please be like those disciples whom Paul spoke, who searched the Scriptures daily to see if these things were so.[\[93\]](#) What I have found in my own life is that God keeps refining my belief system, exposing what false beliefs I have had and revealing more and more truth to me. One of the hardest things to accept is that we have believed a lie. We do not like to admit to ourselves and to others that we have been wrong. But the greatest men and women of God were those who were willing to see the error of their ways, change, and go a new direction. Both Apostle Paul and Peter demonstrated this quality.

I'd love to be wrong on all that I have written and some James Bond or Capatain America would come to the rescue and save us from our fate, like some recent movies have depicted. But I don't believe it will happen, because that's not what history, nor the ***Bible*** teaches. I'm sad to say. Only the Divine intervention by

Jesus Christ Himself at the Rapture event and the Battle of Armageddon will save the world from total annihilation.

Please get down in prayer. Cry out to the Lord to clarify anything in your own belief system which may be off base. God is faithful and has promised to lead and guide us into all truth.^[94] He said that He that has begun a good work in us will finish it until the end.^[95] But we must do our part and continue to hunger and thirst after righteousness.^[96] We must do our part and continue in obedience to the Word of God we do know. We must do our part and walk in love. If we do these three things, be obedient, and be desperate, while maintaining a loving attitude, God will continue to lead us forward in our journey through life revealing more and more of Himself and His truths to us on the way.

Put your hand into the Hand of God. That shall be to you better than light and safer than a known way.^[97]

Notes:

[1] [Ephesians 6:12](#)

[2] [2Timothy 3:16](#)

[3] [2Timothy 4:2-4](#)

[4] [2Timothy 2:15](#)

[5] [Isaiah 28:9-10](#)

[6] [1Peter 2:2](#)

[7] [1Peter 3:15](#) But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: and be ready always to give an answer to every man that ask you a reason of the hope that is in you with meekness and fear.

[8] John 7:16-17

[9] Psalm 119:100

[10] James 1:22

[11] [Daniel 10:1-21](#)

[12] [Job 1:6-12](#)

[13] [Job 2:1-10](#)

[14] [Luke 4:5-8](#)

[15] [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Devil's_Advocate_\(1997_film\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Devil's_Advocate_(1997_film))

[16] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=IBxD1qZnJzw&list=PLZXAZI7-Vo7KQvXNfQCdnT8r3KtTq1qoc&index=1> (accessed 03/2016)

- [17] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=iHXFpWT8cds> (accessed 03/2016) [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hunk_\(film\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hunk_(film)) (accessed 03/2016)
- [18] [Ephesians 2:2](#)
- [19] [2Corinthians 4:4](#)
- [20] [Revelation 6:4](#) And there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.
- [21] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=d5aeCIRY4kA> (accessed 03/16)
- [22] http://www.ppu.org.uk/learn/infodocs/st_war_peace.html (03/16)
- [23] <https://www.hawaii.edu/powerkills/POSTWWII.HTM> (03/16)
- [24] [Revelation 6:5](#) And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, and lo a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand.
- [25] [Hosea 12:7](#)
- [26] https://www.google.pt/?gws_rd=ssl#q=definition+of+dialectical+materialism (03/16)
- [27] [Revelation 6:6](#) And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny; and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine.
- [28] [Matthew 20:1-16](#)
- [29] [Amos 8:4-6](#)
- [30] [Micah 6:10-13](#)
- [31] [Ezekiel 33:11](#) Say unto them, As I live, says the Lord God, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked; but that the wicked turn from his way and live: turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways; for why will ye die, O house of Israel?
- [32] [Galatians 6:7](#) Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man sows, that shall he also reap.
- [33] [Revelation 6:8](#) And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.
- [34] [Revelation 19:11](#) And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war.
- [35] [Revelation 6:2](#) And I saw, and behold a white horse: and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.
- [36] [Zechariah 6:5](#)
- [37] [1Peter 5:8](#)
- [38] [1John 4:1-3](#)

- [39] [1John 2:15-17](#)
- [40] [James 4:4](#) Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God.
- [41] [Genesis 3:6](#)
- [42] [2Corinthians 11:3](#)
- [43] [2Corinthians 11:14-15](#)
- [44] [Matthew 24:3](#) And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came to him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? And what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?
- [45] [Matthew 24:4-5](#)
- [46] [Matthew 24:6-7](#) And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, bit the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in diverse places.
- [47] [Matthew 24:11](#)
- [48] [Matthew 24:12](#)
- [49] [2Timothy 3:1-5](#)
- [50] [2Timothy 3:13](#)
- [51] [Galatians 1:8-9](#)
- [52] [2Corinthians 11:4\(ISV\)](#)
- [53] [2Corinthians 11:13-14](#)
- [54] [Matthew 24:14](#)
- [55] [Matthew 24:15](#) When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whosoever reads, let him understand.)
- [56] <https://www.templeinstitute.org/> (accessed 03/16)
- [57] [Matthew 24:21](#)
- [58] [Matthew 24:24-25](#)
- [59] [1Timothy 4:1](#)
- [60] [Hebrews 4:12](#)
- [61] [2Corinthians 10:3-5](#)
- [62] [Psalm 1:1-2](#)
- [63] [1Timothy 4:15](#)
- [64] [Hebrews 2:1](#)
- [65] [Joshua 1:8](#)
- [66] [2Corinthians 11:14](#)
- [67] [Matthew 6:23](#)
- [68] [John 3:19](#) And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.
- [69] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zE7PKRjrid4> (accessed 03/16)

- [70] <http://www.why-the-bible.com/bible.htm> (accessed 03/16)
- [71] [Isaiah 8:19](#)
- [72] [1Kings 19:11-12](#) And he said, Go forth, and stand upon the mount before the Lord. And, behold, the Lord passed by, and a great and strong wind rent the mountains, and brake in pieces the rocks before the Lord; but the Lord was not in the wind: and after the wind an earthquake; but the Lord was not in the earthquake: and after the earthquake a fire; but the Lord was not in the fire: and after the fire a still small voice.
- [73] [Isaiah 8:20](#)
- [74] [John 17:17](#)
- [75] [John 6:63](#)
- [76] [2Timothy 2:15](#)
- [77] [John 16:13](#) Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth.
- [78] [John 14:15-17](#)
- [79] [John 14:23](#)
- [80] <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=QmBymKXgrV4> (03/16)
- [81] [Psalms 119:37](#)
- [82] [1Corinthians 12:10](#)
- [83] [John 14:15](#) If ye love me, keep my commandments.
- [84] [1John 5:3](#) For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous.
- [85] [John 14:15-16](#) If ye love me, keep my commandments. And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever.
- [86] [Luke 11:13](#)
- [87] [Acts 19:1-6](#) ...And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came upon them; and they spoke with tongues and prophesied.
- [88] [Acts 8:17-21](#)
- [89] [1Corinthians 12:9-10](#) To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues.
- [90] [1Corinthians 10:11-12](#)
- [91] [Romans 15:4](#)
- [92] [Deuteronomy 29:29](#)
- [93] [Acts 17:11](#) These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.
- [94] [John 16:13](#)
- [95] [Philippians 1:6](#) Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ.
- [96] [Matthew 5:6](#)
- [97] https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Gate_of_the_Year (accessed 03/16)

Where is America in Bible prophecy?

Does the Bible say anything remotely about the USA, the greatest military force in all of history? In the over 8,000 verses containing Bible prophecy is America mentioned at all? Most prophecy books are written from an American viewpoint and often avoid the hard question of ***Where is America in Bible Prophecy?*** Dennis Edwards, having lived outside of the USA for more than 40 years, gives a critical look at this question and comes to some shocking conclusions. For those really interested in grappling with the truth of the state of our nation and the world, this book is a must, with a powerful message that won't leave anyone neutral.